

# Lies & Deception

Concerning God, Religion, the Bible, Jesus, Miracles, Resurrection,  
Angels, Demons, Satan, History, Archaeology, Science, Creation,  
Evolution *and...*

*What you probably never learned in*

*School or Church*

Copyright © 1981 by Robert G. Linkey

“Scripture quotations taken from the New American Standard Bible®, Copyright © 1960, 1962, 1963, 1968, 1971, 1972, 1973, 1975, 1977, 1995 by The Lockman Foundation. Used by permission.” ([www.Lockman.org](http://www.Lockman.org))

## INTRODUCTION

### **Please Read This Before You Begin:**

Does the average person have the time or the education to research and evaluate mainstream beliefs concerning God, religion and science - ideas that many people accept as truth and which permeate every realm of influence in our society? Unfortunately, people are usually so busy with the everyday cares of life that they find little time and even less desire to delve into any lofty quest for truth in such areas. After all, don't most people just believe what they learned in school or church, or what they have gleaned from media, family, friends, movies, books, news reports and of course, the internet?

Obviously, any search for truth that involves God, religion and science would be time consuming and would require wading through a sea of high-minded and often conflicting information espoused by scientists, professors, philosophers, historians and theologians who sometimes have difficulty communicating their wealth of knowledge and insight in a way that isn't overly detailed and boring for the average person. This book was written by a thoughtful and inquisitive public servant who had a burning desire to seek out truth in these areas. What began as a simple quest, turned into a passionate journey that took *thousands of hours and more than two years to complete*. This exposé systematically untangles a web of lies that are keeping many in a state of intellectual, emotional and spiritual captivity and it does so in a logical, intelligent and interesting way. And, although this book was originally hand-written nearly thirty years ago as a labor of love for a few friends and co-workers, *the truth that is revealed in this work is actually more relevant now than ever!* Obviously, *some* of the statistical data from

thirty years ago has since changed; however, the original information has intentionally been left intact (with a few notes and updates added in bold italics) to show the world that this eye-opening information has been available for a very long time and yet so many people are *still* unaware of it. This fact alone will be shocking to many! Plus, the overall truths that this original data supported back then have remained unchanged and are only *strengthened by more recent stats and discoveries.*

Is it possible for a firefighter (now a retired Fire Captain) to write with authority and relevancy in these important and controversial areas of life? Have there ever been any common people in history whose writings have had a transforming impact on people's lives and then remained relevant and important into the future? Indeed there have been many! Truth will remain truth no matter who declares it. If a brilliant mathematician states that  $2 + 2 = 4$ , would that equation be any less true if uttered by the average person? Whenever applicable in this book, facts of an academic nature have been referenced and credited to people who have the educational credentials to support and lend credence to those facts. In some cases, this information has been sorted and pared down to keep it more understandable for the average person *but nonetheless true*. This old manuscript has been dusted off and "resurrected" because the truth it contains has never been more needed! The internet has provided a marvelous means to make this life - changing work available to anyone who hates lies and wants to know the truth. That is why this book was made available on-line in its entirety to be viewed, printed, or downloaded for FREE by anyone at any time. A [paperback edition](#) was later made available for purchase because many people still prefer to read books "the old fashioned way." A ["Kindle" edition](#) has likewise been added. However, for those who still prefer the idea of sending this book to others at no cost, go to:

[wwwLies-Deception.com](http://www.Lies-Deception.com) and feel free to download it, print personal copies, e-mail it to friends, or share it on social media sites such as “facebook.” This permission is granted provided that no changes are ever made to the content and that there is never any monetary charge.

Note: The best way to read this book is from “start to finish” (beginning with the Preface and Prologue). Each chapter contains insights and information that subsequent chapters are built upon in a progressive and logical order.

## *Preface*

### **LIES & DECEPTION**

Some people will believe almost anything they hear or read, without ever investigating the facts. There are others of course, who are much more discerning, yet there is not a single person in the world who is totally incapable of being deceived. All of us at one time or another have accepted something at face value that wasn't really true and, unfortunately, we have sometimes suffered unfavorable consequences for doing so.

The purpose of this book is to expose some extremely malicious lies that many people have been accepting as truth. These lies have been slowly crippling our society and they will ultimately bring destruction if the truth is not revealed. Their harmful effects reach beyond the physical realm of man and into his very spirit.

This book only touches upon a selective portion of the malignant ideas that have been infecting our society. It contains many indisputable facts that most people are unaware of, but it is by no means to be considered an extensive treatise. It would require many volumes to include all of the substantiating evidence that is available to support the conclusions of this book; however, there is enough information contained within these pages to effectively reveal the falsehoods that are so widely accepted as truth.

Anybody can become a victim of deception, especially if their deceiver happens to be a clever old master whose main purpose in life is to prevent people from knowing the truth. Unfortunately, some individuals are so willingly swayed by this master of deception; they purposely avoid any confrontation with the truth. Under the pretense of

already being acquainted with the facts, they will ignore any evidence that might contradict their own cherished opinions or disturb their psychological comfort zones. It is because of this attitude that some people will absolutely refuse to read this book.

Even those who are not so biased may prematurely conclude, after reading the first few pages of the prologue, that the entire content of this book will be nothing more than unsubstantiated religious propaganda. Therefore, it is important to resist any preconceived mind-sets that may be triggered by the prologue and to allow the *evidence* presented in the remaining chapters of this book to speak for itself.

## *Prologue*

*“You are of your father the devil, and you want to do the desires of your father. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth because there is no truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own nature, for he is a liar and the father of lies.”*  
*(Words of Jesus Christ as recorded in the Gospel of John: Chapter 8 verse 44 - spoken to some of the religious leaders of His day.)*

### **Master of Deception**

The most deceptive con artist in the world has systematically “set the stage” - attempting to pull off the most insidious “sting” operation ever foisted upon mankind. The irony of this tragic plot is that most of the “players” involved are nothing more than unwitting dupes who consider themselves to be enlightened advocates of truth; when in fact, they are peddling a poison that will destroy not only society, *but themselves as well.*

The roads upon which this deceiver travels are well-established arteries that infiltrate both the human mind and soul. After all, what affects the destiny of mankind more than the pathways of our educational systems, our communications media and yes, even our religious organizations. When these and other trusted inroads to social behavior are used to transport deception rather than truth, catastrophe may ultimately follow. The purpose of this book is to expose some of those malignant deceptions that have been cleverly hidden under a guise of “truth” during this past century. These pages contain a wealth of information that few people are aware of and, hopefully, will serve as an

anecdote for the ‘snake oil’ that much of society has been swallowing. However, before examining the insidious lies that are revealed in this book, it is first necessary to learn some background information about the one who perpetrates them. It is also important to understand the motives of this deceiver and his methods of operation.

As you may have already surmised, this master of deception is an angelic being who the Bible refers to as Satan, or the devil. Now you may not believe that there is such a being and you may also believe that the Bible is nothing more than “a bunch of fairy tales.” But, if this is the case, please reserve any premature judgments until you have honestly evaluated the *evidence* which is presented in the subsequent chapters of this book.

According to Biblical tradition, before the devil was known as Satan (which means adversary) he was called Lucifer (which means “son of the morning” or “light bearing”). God created Lucifer to rule above all the other angels in heaven. He was God’s “anointed cherub” and was endowed with great supernatural power and beauty. Lucifer was so powerful and so beautiful, that one day he became filled with egotistical pride and decided that he himself should rule as god. He thus set out to overthrow God’s Kingdom by convincing as many as one-third of the angels in heaven to join him in a revolt. The ensuing rebellion was unsuccessful because God was, and still is, omnipotent. And, as a result of the conflict, Satan and his angels fell from their highest heavenly stations forever.

Satan was unsuccessful in his attempt to be like God but nevertheless, he has not given up his fight against Him. God could have immediately destroyed those who rebelled, but, for reasons of His own, he chose not to. The sudden annihilation of Satan and his followers might have served to promote an unjustified fear and suspicion amongst God’s loyal heavenly ranks. So, in order to preserve a love that is based



upon free volition and trust, God may have wanted to demonstrate to those who remained loyal to him that goodness is not only superior, but is also more preferable than evil.

Indeed, the day is coming when all evil will be put to an end; but, until that time comes, the Bible indicates that there is a fierce battle taking place in an unseen dimension all around us. And, since the devil is totally incapable of fighting directly against God; he therefore focuses his attacks upon God's own special creation – Man.

He knows that God gave people the freedom to choose between good and evil; and, because of this, he tries to take advantage of human volition. He also knows how deeply God loves mankind. Therefore, he tries to lead people away from their creator by causing doubt, rebellion and finally rejection of God and His word.

He accomplishes this through many schemes, most of which are very clever and subtle. And, even though God has always provided many proofs of his own existence, His true nature and unfathomable love, most people disregard the inner voice that would ultimately lead them to a true knowledge of God and an everlasting relationship with Him. Instead, they willfully heed the voice and influence of the very one who wants to destroy them.

Satan has the ability of influencing thoughts and manipulating the mind (within certain limitations). Once again, this may sound absolutely ridiculous to a lot of people, yet many of these same people will believe in E.S. P., telekinesis, mental telepathy, and all sorts of inexplicable supernatural phenomenon. Therefore, if these paranormal powers are sometimes displayed through mortal humans, why is it so difficult to believe that supernatural, ultra dimensional, angelic beings could possess even greater abilities? Obviously, if such beings do exist, making inroads into the human mind should pose no real problems (now the question is for many: Do such beings exist? The answer to this

question will become obvious as the evidence in the remaining chapters begins to unfold).

As people are manipulated to drift farther away from God, the adversary's psychological influences become increasingly strong. Eventually, he can cause a spiritual blindness that leaves its victims without any realization of their desperate condition. However, even in this state of blindness, the light of God's truth is still able to penetrate the darkness and bring forth sight.

The deceptive schemes of Satan are usually very subtle and they often occur over long periods of time. His *gradual* influences may be manifested through music, television, literature, educational systems and many other sources *including religion*. Eventually these subtle influences can bring forth radical changes in social values and ethical standards. And, as moral and ethical standards deteriorate, so does man's spiritual relationship with God.

All throughout history, diverse cultures have experienced repeated patterns of moral and ethical changes that ultimately resulted in social deterioration and collapse. The United States (although not yet destroyed) can be used as a prime example of how subtle influences can eventually produce radical changes within a culture. Simply compare the ethical and moral standards of 100 years ago with those of today. The "fruits" of American society 100 years ago are quite different than the "fruits" of American society today. However, the influences that brought forth those differences were very gradual. And, should this trend continue, American culture will eventually reap a predictable harvest of destruction, according to the pattern of history.

At this point, there is something that should be clarified. It is understood that every culture in history has always had some degree of evil and corruption within its structure due to the very nature of Mankind. However, satanic influences can serve to bring about an

intensification and widespread acceptance of behavior and thoughts that are contrary to God's beneficial guidelines. A cancerous spread of evil, that touches every corner of society, can develop as people move farther away from God.

And, contrary to popular belief, the culmination of evil does not always have to be manifested in some form of outward decadence. Satanic influences may also serve to promote widespread religious deception that outwardly seems moral and ethical, yet inwardly distorts and perverts the true nature and purpose of God. When this occurs, the forces of evil have still succeeded in accomplishing their purpose.

Some people assume that a person has to be "demon possessed" in the classical sense before they can be influenced and manipulated by Satan; however, this is a false assumption. Satan doesn't care if you are a drunkard, a drug addict, a prostitute, an athlete, a doctor, a lawyer, a guru, or a minister. His number one concern is that in whatever you do, he is able to keep you from personally knowing God and His provision for eternal life.

God does not force anybody to love him. That is why He instilled the gift of free choice within the human race. Unfortunately, this gift was abused and evil was willfully allowed to enter the world. As a result of this, people became separated from their Creator and His intended relationship with mankind. God could not intimately share His total righteousness and perfection with any degree of evil, regardless of how much He still loved mankind. However, since God's love was so great, He devised a plan that would allow people to regain their lost fellowship with Him. At great expense to Himself, He provided a bridge for that gulf which separates us from Him. The following pages expose some of the lies that have prevented people from crossing that bridge.

*“...you will know the truth, and the truth will make you free.” (John  
8:32)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## CONTENTS

Preface

**Lies** ..... 1

Prologue

**Master of Deception**..... 3

## PART I

### *The Bible, Jesus & Religion*

Chapter I

**Merely a Book?** ..... 13

*The Lie: The Bible is full of myths and you can't trust our modern translations.*

Chapter II

**Just a Man?** ..... 45

*The Lie: Jesus was a good moral teacher but he was not The Son of God*

Chapter III

**Dead and Gone?** .....66

*The Lie: Jesus was never raised from the dead.*

Chapter IV

**Never to Return?** ..... 86

*The Lie: Jesus is gone forever.*

## Chapter V

<b>God is Cruel?</b> .....	136
----------------------------	-----

*The Lie: A God of love could never allow suffering and evil.*

## Chapter VI

<b>It all Seems Hopeless?</b> .....	166
-------------------------------------	-----

*The Lie: Christianity seems too difficult, unfair, irrelevant and powerless*

## Chapter VII

<b>Goodness Attains Heaven?</b> .....	194
---------------------------------------	-----

*The Lie: Doing lots of good deeds will get a person into Heaven*

## Chapter VIII

<b>More than One Way?</b> .....	207
---------------------------------	-----

*The Ultimate Lie: There are many religions and philosophies that lead to God*

## PART II

*The Bible & Science*

<b>Introduction</b> .....	234
---------------------------	-----

## Chapter I

<b>No Scientific Validity?</b> .....	234
--------------------------------------	-----

*The Lie: The Bible is scientifically incorrect*

## Chapter II

**Old and Getting Better? .....264***The Lie: The longer that evolution continues, systems become more complex*

## Chapter III

**Fossils Prove Evolution? ..... 284***The Lie: The fossil record reveals an upward progression of complexity in life systems*

## Chapter IV

**Missing Links?.....308***The Lie: Humans and apes evolved from a common ancestor*

## Chapter V

**Life by Chance? .....325***The Lie: If given enough time life can be formed through random processes*

## Epilogue

**Deception Mastered .....325*****Recommended Study Resources – Page 332*****REFERENCE****Part I .....340****Part II .....347**

PART I  
The Bible, Jesus & Religion



## MERELY A BOOK?

### *The Lie: The Bible is full of myths and you can't trust our modern translations.*

People in our modern society are diligently searching for truth and purpose in life. Some study philosophy, others look to psychology; some join religious systems while still others turn to drugs. This universal quest follows an endless number of avenues, but it is surprising how few people ever seriously consider the Bible itself as a possible road to truth. Instead, the Bible rests prominently displayed on book shelves and coffee tables as some powerless ancient relic while inferior writings become “dog-eared” and tattered from use.

This unfortunate condition exists partially because so few people understand just how unique the Bible is when compared to all other literature – both ancient and modern. For example: The Bible was the very first book to be put into a codex (leaf page) form.<sup>1</sup> and it was also the first major book printed<sup>2</sup> (on Gutenberg's printing press). Since that time, the Bible has had more copies printed, and has been read by more people than any other book in history<sup>3</sup> (in fact, its circulation has been greater than the next five books combined - Three of which are Bible related).<sup>4</sup> And, not only was the Bible the first major book printed, it was also the first major book to be translated. This first translation was from the Hebrew language into the Greek language and is known as “The Greek Septuagint.”<sup>5</sup> And, from the time of the Septuagint, the Bible has since been translated into over 1200 different languages<sup>6</sup> – no other book even approaches this remarkable statistic. Moreover, the Bible has influenced more books to be written, more songs, more music, more poems, more essays, more commentaries and more literature in general, than any other book by far.

***UPDATE: As of the year 2010, according to the “Wycliffe Bible Translators” the Bible has now been translated into more than 4700 languages! And, although there are periodically certain popular books that have greater sales numbers in a given month or months; there is still no book that approaches the consistent long-term dominance in circulation that the Bible maintains. There have literally been BILLIONS of Bibles sold and circulated!***

Consider also the content of the Bible and the manner in which it was compiled: It was written on three different continents over a 1500 year period that ended almost 2000 years ago. More than 40 different authors were involved in its composition during a span of some 60 generations, and, what is exceptionally unique is that these authors came from diverse walks of life. For example, David was a king, Peter was a fisherman, Luke was a doctor and historian, Matthew was a tax collector, Paul was a rabbi, Amos was a Sheppard, Joshua was a general, and the list goes on and on. Some were at peace, some were at war; some were happy, some were depressed; some enjoyed prosperity while others were subjected to poverty; some enjoyed freedom while others wrote from within prison walls; and, what is absolutely amazing, is that in spite of all these differences, we find a certain harmony within one unfolding story throughout the entire Bible.<sup>7</sup>

Whereas, in other religious and philosophical writings, we find men voicing their *OWN* views and opinions on particular subjects concerning man, the Bible is the only book wherein we find people writing “*THUS SAITH THE LORD*”, or making similar pronouncements more than 2000 times.

The Bible talks about unknown future events more confidently than and in as much detail as other books tell about past and present events. Even though many of its authors had absolutely no way of being influenced by another’s writings, due to diversities of time,

distance, and background, we still find them describing the same future events, agreeing completely on controversial issues, and saying “ Thus saith the Lord” over and over again.<sup>7</sup>

In spite of such overwhelming credentials, isn't it amazing that most high school and college students would sooner die than be caught reading a Bible on campus by their peers. This widespread fear of humiliation and rejection is the sad result of one of the most diabolical schemes to conceal the truth that has ever been foisted upon humanity.

### *Fact or Fiction?*

Throughout history, men have tried to discredit the Bible with a barrage of criticism that no other book would have been able to endure. The Bible has been labeled as myth and legend by numerous scholars through past centuries and by many modern day scholars who have taught these views in our universities. One famous critic was the French Philosopher, Voltaire, who made the claim that within one hundred years from his lifetime, the Bible, along with Christianity, would regress into a state of extinction.<sup>8</sup> It is interesting to note that fifty years after Voltaire's death, the Geneva Bible Society was using his home and printing press to produce numerous copies of that indestructible book.<sup>9</sup>

Our universities and even some of our theological seminaries have endeavored to demonstrate the “unreliability” of certain books, names, dates, places, and recorded events in the Bible. However, by the time the “higher critics” finished dissecting the Bible, there was not much left that could be considered true and reliable. Moreover, these skeptical arguments have been presented in such a scholarly fashion, that many Christian students have suffered a loss of confidence in the Scriptures.

However, in recent years, the science of archaeology has reconfirmed the historical accuracy of the Bible. And as a result, the same critical arguments that at one time appeared to be so factual, have

been crumbling one right after the other. Because of this, many grey-haired professors have been forced to abandon theories which they have taught throughout their entire careers. Some of these critical theories, and the evidence that refutes them, will be discussed in the following pages. The selected theories comprise only a small portion of the many ideas that have been conceived by various scholars of the past two centuries; however, they will sufficiently serve to demonstrate the widespread folly of Biblical “higher criticism”.

### *“Wholly” Moses*

The “higher critics” often differ in their concepts regarding the manner in which the Bible was compiled; but, they all seem to come to the same conclusion – that it contains many inaccuracies and myths. For example: One of the most famous critical examinations of the Bible is known as “The Documentary Hypothesis.” One of the major points in “The Documentary Hypothesis”, states that Moses could not have been the author of the Pentateuch or Torah (The first five books of the Bible).

Such a contention is contrary to the belief of most Christians and Jews because, according to tradition, the Pentateuch was written by Moses and was completed around 1400 B. C.. However, the hypothesis claims that the Pentateuch was compiled by *various* authors over a four hundred year period which allegedly didn’t even begin until about 800 B. C.. It also claims that Moses could not have been one of these authors because writing was virtually unknown during this time; therefore, according to the Documentary Hypothesis, this long period from the actual time of Moses (1400 B.C.) until the alleged completion of the Pentateuch, (400 B.C.) would give birth to many inaccuracies and legends about the early history of Israel.

Unfortunately (for the “higher critics”) archaeology has proven that, not only was writing in existence during the time of Moses, but that

sophisticated systems of writing existed even long before the time of Abraham (2000 B.C.). In fact, archaeologists agree that Egypt and Babylonia had many schools, teachers, poets, and even libraries centuries before Abraham was born.<sup>10</sup> Excavations at Ugarit and Ras Shamra (north of Canaan near the Syrian coast) have also revealed more evidence of an advanced literary culture in Canaan which existed prior to the time of Moses. This culture had a dictionary that was used by Scribes and which listed words in four different languages (Ugaritic, Babylonian, Sumerian, and Hurrian).<sup>11</sup>

At the site of ancient Elba, archaeologists have unearthed more than 17,000 tablets which date all the way back to 2200 B.C. The Elba tablets reveal a sophisticated form of literature including an elaborate code of laws, religious ceremonies, judicial proceedings, and even many of the same names and cities that are found in the book of Genesis.<sup>12</sup> There are numerous other discoveries which confirm the fact that writing was in existence long before Moses, and, in the light of such evidence, one would have to agree that Moses was certainly more than qualified to be the author of the Pentateuch since he was raised as an Egyptian prince and educated by the finest teachers available.

### *Conquering Kings*

A specific part of the Pentateuch that has also endured extreme criticism is found in the fourteenth chapter of Genesis, which describes the military campaigns of four Mesopotamian kings during the time of Abraham. Many scholars had declared this chapter to be a fictional account for a number of various reasons. Even the famous archaeologist, William F. Albright, at one time considered this chapter to be the by-product of borrowed legends until he personally made certain discoveries that caused him to reverse his claims.

For example: He and other critics (including “The Documentary Hypothesis”) claimed that the route of travel taken by the four kings would have been impossible because there were no cities or developed areas along that route. However, we now have proof (because of the excavations of Nelson Glueck and William F. Albright) that there were several important cities along this route.<sup>13</sup>

Another point of criticism stated that such extensive travel was non-existent during that time period. However, clay tablets, which were discovered at Mari, stated that the King of Ugarit was planning to visit the King of Mari – a distance farther than that described in Genesis 14.<sup>14</sup> A Babylonian tablet was also discovered that contained a rental agreement for a wagon, in which the owner stipulated that the wagon was not to be driven as far as the Mediterranean coast.<sup>15</sup> This tablet dates back to about the same time period of Genesis 14. Now, the question is: Why would someone make such a stipulation in a contract if such distances were not commonly traveled?

There are several other arguments against Genesis 14 that could be mentioned; however, these arguments have likewise crumbled beneath the archaeologist’s spade. Therefore, the fourteenth chapter of Genesis is now considered to be historical by those who once declared it to be legend.

### *Sodom & Gomorrah*

The book of Genesis also contains a remarkable story about two flourishing cities called Sodom and Gomorrah, which became so corrupt and degenerate, that God had to destroy them in order to put an end to their evil. Many critics have considered this account to be total myth from start to finish. They maintained that it was merely a fictitious scare tactic with no real historical basis. This claim was made, partially due to

the fact that the cities described in the Bible were large flourishing cities, yet there had been no real evidence that these cities had ever existed.

However, shortly after the turn of the century, an amazing discovery was made at the southern end of the Jordan valley where the Jordan River empties into the Dead Sea. The area south of the Dead Sea is called “The Vale of Sidden” in the Bible and was where Sodom and Gomorrah, along with three other cities were supposed to have been located. After a great deal of exploration in this area, the mysterious “legendary” cities were finally discovered. The amazing thing is that the cities were not found on the southern shore of the Dead Sea. Instead, the cities were discovered under the Dead Sea.<sup>16</sup>

Geologists estimate that at approximately 2000 B.C., a great earthquake and volcanic eruption caused the cities to literally sink into the Dead Sea.<sup>17</sup> This area, which was once densely populated, very suddenly became uninhabited and desolate for thousands of years. There is evidence, throughout the entire region, of an ancient catastrophic holocaust which coincides with the Biblical record of God’s judgment upon Sodom and Gomorrah.

***UPDATE: Since the time of this discovery, the waters of the Dead Sea have receded to a degree that has enabled further research and it is now believed that this particular location is not the location of Sodom and Gomorrah. However, in recent years, there have been other discoveries that verify the existence of these once flourishing cities (in the same general area) and corroborating evidence of the manner in which the Bible says they were destroyed. There will be links to free websites at the end of this book for further research on these findings.***

Another area of Scripture that has suffered a great amount of criticism is that which deals with the Hebrew conquest of Canaan.

According to the Bible, the Israelites were delivered by God from Egyptian captivity and were then led by Moses on a journey to the land which God had promised to give them. The Jews were led to the doorstep of this land, but failed to acquire it because they had lost confidence in God's ability to keep His promise concerning the Land. Because of their unbelief, the Israelites were made to wander throughout the desert wilderness for forty years before they were given another opportunity to acquire this land. In order to claim the Promised Land, the Jews had to conquer the people of Canaan, who, like those residents of Sodom and Gomorrah had degenerated into a perverse society.

The Bible depicts some extremely violent battles that were waged against Canaan, in which, the Israelites destroyed city after city along with their inhabitants. Many scholars once believed that this Biblical account was unreliable and unhistorical. They claimed that the Hebrew infiltration into Canaan culture was a very gradual and nonviolent process that occurred over a long period of time. They believed it was a slow osmosis of one culture blending in with the other, and supported this position with some very intellectual arguments. However, their arguments collapsed when city after city was excavated and found to have been conquered and destroyed exactly as described in the Bible.<sup>18</sup>

### *Jericho*

One of the conquered cities was Jericho. The Bible says that God caused the walls to "fall down flat" so that the Israelites could march straight ahead into the city in order to destroy it. At one occupation level of the ancient site of Jericho, archaeologists found that the walls of the city had fallen completely outward.<sup>19</sup> They also discovered that the city had been burned, but had not been looted (a detail which also



coincides with the Biblical record).<sup>20</sup> And, although there is still some controversy as to whether or not this occupation level fits into the correct Biblical time period, many competent archaeologists believe that it does.

Shortly before the Israelites fought this “Battle of Jericho”, the Bible says that the waters of the Jordan River “rose up upon a heap” so that the Jews could march right through the river bed toward the city. To some, this seemed like another ‘fictitious account’; however, it has since been discovered that a similar event has occurred at least three times in history, in which, upstream landslides have caused the river channel below to dry up for several hours. The last time this occurred was in 1927.<sup>21</sup>

This is not to insinuate that all of God’s miracles can be explained by natural phenomenon because they can’t! God does not have to work within the laws of nature; however, sometimes he chooses to do so. If the event described in the Bible was the result of a natural landslide, the timing of such an event would indeed be miraculous.

***UPDATE: There are still controversies concerning the ancient ruins of Jericho and Biblical time frames. There will be links to free websites at the end of the book for further research and verification.***

### *Hittites*

In the Biblical accounts of the Canaan conquest, mention is also made of a nation known as the Hittites. These people are mentioned in other parts of the Old Testament as well, and are depicted as being a strong and powerful nation. Until recently, the Hittites were considered by some scholars to be an insignificant people, while others considered them to be legendary. However, archaeology has proven that at several times in history, the Hittites were indeed a mighty nation.<sup>22</sup> In fact, so

much evidence has been made available, that a person can go to Harvard University and study the Hittite language.<sup>23</sup>

### *The Exile*

The Biblical record of the destruction of Jerusalem by Babylon has also been labeled as unhistorical by many scholars. The Bible states that Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, conquered and destroyed the cities of Judah, including Jerusalem. It goes on to say that most of the surviving Jews were taken captive and placed in exile at Babylon. The Bible also infers that many of the prisoners were treated with respect and that some were even educated and given certain prestigious duties while in captivity. This exile is said to have lasted seventy years, after which time, the Jews were allowed to return to their homeland and rebuild Jerusalem. Information pertaining to this exile is found in the books of Jeremiah, Ezekiel, II Chronicles, Ezra and Nehemiah.

One of the most famous critics of the Jewish exile accounts was a man by the name of C. C. Torrey, who proclaimed that there never was any destruction or rebuilding of Jerusalem and that there never was any real exile. Many scholars adhered to his arguments because they seemed to be factually supported. However, Torrey's analysis is no longer valid due to recent archaeological discoveries.

Excavations of the cities of Judah have proven that they were indeed destroyed by King Nebuchadnezzar of Babylon. More than three hundred tablets, dating from 595 to 570 B.C., were discovered in Babylon. These tablets prove that after the destruction of Judah, the surviving Jews were taken captive and placed in exile at Babylon.<sup>24</sup> The tablets contained lists of rations which were paid to Jewish captives who were involved in many different occupations and trades. Among those people mentioned in the ration lists is found the name of Jehoiachin, "King of Judah."<sup>25</sup> This supports the Biblical record which states that

Jehoiachin was taken captive, and yet was still considered to be King of Judah, even while he was in captivity.

The Bible suggests that special treatment was given to some of the captives including Jehoiachin and also to Daniel and his friends. Such an idea seemed preposterous to many critics who claimed that the Babylonians extended no such courtesies to prisoners. However, in spite of the critical contentions, evidence that supports the Biblical record is found within the same tablets that contain the previously mentioned ration lists. Additional evidence was found when a building was excavated, upon which, were found some inscriptions that stated that the building was once used as a place of learning, where captive prisoners were taught the customs and knowledge of the Babylonian culture.<sup>26</sup>

The Bible also states that the Jewish captives were released by Cyrus, King of Persia, after he conquered Babylon. This was another point of argument for the skeptics who claimed that such an event never occurred. Their arguments collapsed when a broken cylinder was discovered in Babylon. This cylinder, known as the “Cyrus Cylinder,” contains inscriptions which state that Cyrus allowed captive people to return to their homelands to rebuild their cities and temples.<sup>27</sup>

The cumulative accounts concerning the Jewish exile are supported by many extra-Biblical sources. Only those who are biased or uninformed, continue to attack their historicity.

### *Daniel*

Another part of the Bible that has undergone extreme criticism is the book of Daniel. One of the reasons Daniel has been maligned by so many critics is because the book contains numerous prophecies about events that actually occurred long after it was supposed to have been written (600 B.C.). The book of Daniel contains some specific, detailed

prophecies about the empires of Egypt, Persia, Greece, and also a history of the Jews unto the time of Antiochus Epiphanes (170 B.C.).

Because of these prophecies, critics have tried to “late date” the book of Daniel at a time shortly after 170 B.C. and, if it were academically possible, the critics would probably try to assign even a later date than this because the Book contains many other prophecies that were not fulfilled until long after 170 B.C.. The skeptics are forced to overlook such prophecies as the rise and fall of the Roman Empire and many others, including some that are yet being fulfilled in our own generation. The book of Daniel was written mostly in the Hebrew and Aramaic languages. Those portions written in Hebrew were specifically intended for the Jews, while those portions written in Aramaic were specifically intended for the Babylonians. However, there are three Greek words in the book which were considered by the critics to be evidence of their claim that the book of Daniel couldn’t have been written until after Babylon was conquered by Alexander the Great.

This argument, like scores of others, has been totally refuted by archaeology. It has been established beyond doubt that Greece and Babylon were involved in extensive trade even before 600 B.C.<sup>28</sup> As for the three Greek words, they were all names of musical instruments, one of which is known to have been used in Babylon, long before the time of Daniel.<sup>29</sup> The presence of several Sumerian words within the book serves to verify its antiquity because this language was almost a dead language during the time of Daniel and shortly thereafter became virtually non-existent.<sup>30</sup>

The critics have also attacked the book of Daniel by stating that it is historically inaccurate. They have scoffed at the stories of Daniel in the lion’s den and have ridiculed the account of Shadrach, Meshach, and Abednego who allegedly were thrown into a “fiery furnace.” These stories have become more credible since archaeologists unearthed a

giant furnace in Babylon, along with some inscriptions which stated that the furnace was used for burning people who refused to worship the Babylonian gods.<sup>31</sup> A large pit was also excavated which was at one time used for feeding people to wild animals.<sup>32</sup>

Daniel also states that Belshazzar was King of Babylon during its conquest by Persia. The skeptics considered this account to be proof that the book of Daniel was full of legends and myths because secular history had proven that a man named Nabonidus was King of Babylon during this time period. In fact, the name of Belshazzar was not to be found anywhere in secular literature.

However, thanks again to archaeology, there have been several discoveries which have helped to clear up this apparent controversy. Recent evidence confirms that there was indeed a man named Belshazzar during this time period and that he was the son of Nabonidus. We have learned through ancient records that Nabonidus was away from Babylon during the Persian conquest and that Belshazzar was left behind to govern as king. We also know that Belshazzar was killed that night just as it was recorded by Daniel.<sup>33</sup>

In spite of a barrage of scholarly criticism, the book of Daniel has emerged as being historically accurate.

### *Jacob & Esau*

There have been many other archaeological discoveries that have helped to shed light on some questionable Bible passages, even though the discoveries did not directly pertain to the Biblical events or characters. For example, the Bible records a story about a man named Isaac who was the father of twin sons called Jacob and Esau. Esau was the first born of the two boys and grew up to be a strong and skillful hunter. He was highly favored by his father while his brother Jacob was favored by his mother.

One day, Esau returned from a long hunting trip and was extremely tired and hungry. He was enticed by the aroma of some stew that Jacob had prepared, but, when he asked his brother for a bowl of it, Jacob refused to give him any unless he was willing to sell his birthright in exchange for the food. Esau was so hungry, that his birthright seemed less important than a hot meal, so he swore an oath to his brother and took the food in exchange for his inheritance.

The Bible goes on to describe how Jacob later deceived his father, who was old and almost blind, by disguising himself to look and smell like Esau in order to receive the oral blessing which was supposed to be given to Esau. And, even though Isaac soon realized that he had been deceived, he allowed the blessing to remain with Jacob.

The historical validity of this Biblical account has been questioned by many sincere scholars. The question has been asked, “If Isaac discovered the deception shortly after it occurred, then why didn’t he simply retract it?” Everything was done verbally, so all he would have to do is reprove Jacob for his conduct and transfer the blessing back to Esau.

This does seem like the logical solution in our modern day culture; but, archaeology has given deeper insight into the social and legal customs that prevailed during the time of Isaac. For example, the Nuzi Tablets contain some interesting accounts from which we have learned that an oral blessing was legally binding and irrevocable.<sup>34</sup> The Nuzi Tablets also reinforce the Biblical account of Esau selling his birthright for a bowl of stew, because one tablet records a similar transaction between two brothers, only in this situation, one brother sold his inheritance for just one sheep.<sup>35</sup>

### *Coming Attractions*

In the light of recent discoveries such as the Nuzi Tablets, many Bible stories, that at one time seemed incredible, are now very credible indeed. The great copper mines of King Solomon have been found, lost cities and nations have been reconstructed, dead languages have been resurrected and each new decade brings with it new discoveries which support the accuracy and reliability of the Holy Scriptures. Altogether, more than twenty-five thousand sites that have some Old Testament connection have been found and have yet to be excavated. Therefore, we can assume that those arguments that still may speak against the historicity of the Bible are standing on “shaky ground” and will eventually topple like so many before them. And, as the Old Testament record is reinforced through archaeology, the many arguments against the New Testament record are likewise vanishing because the discoveries that have vindicated the historical accuracy of the New Testament are even more numerous than those which support the Old Testament. This is because the New Testament era is not as far removed from us in time; therefore, the structures, records, etc., have not endured the same amount of natural deterioration. Some of the many discoveries supporting the New Testament will be mentioned later in this chapter, but, first it is necessary to dispel another common assault against the accuracy of the Bible.

### *“Write” or Wrong*

The Bible has been translated and re-copied numerous times by many people over a period of thousands of years. Because of this, it is a common belief that our present day Bible has had many thoughts and words either added or subtracted since the time of original authorship.

The skeptics contend that the Scriptures have been distorted and changed so many times that they cannot be accepted as being reliable.

However, it is interesting to note that few of these critics ever question our present day copies of Aristotle, Caesar, Plato and a host of other ancient writer's works. Students in our universities study the writings of men like Pliny, Herodotus, Sophocles, Tacitus and many others without ever questioning their historical accuracy, because most professors teach these early writings as if they were factual, unquestionable history.

This being true, why then is the Bible so often considered to be inaccurate while other early writings are considered to be historical? The answer is twofold: This blatant discrimination exists primarily because the Bible contains much that is classified as being supernatural and is therefore automatically labeled as "mythical error" because of preconceived ideas about supernatural events and not on the basis of fact. (The supernatural will be dealt with in chapter three). The second reason for this disparity in judgment between the Bible and other ancient literature is this: Seldom does anyone make an honest and equal comparison between the Bible and other classical literature by applying the *same methods of testing to both*. In the preceding pages the historical accuracy of the Bible was established on the basis of archaeology and physical evidence only; however, there are other factors which have to be considered when trying to determine the accuracy of ancient literature. Some of those methods will be examined in the following pages and the majority of this examination will involve a comparison between the New Testament and other ancient literature; however, the Old Testament will also be briefly considered.

Critics often claim that Christians can't really trust their Bible because they don't have any of the original documents. But, what they fail to realize is that there aren't any original documents from any of the



previously mentioned ancient philosophers, historians, etc.... This is because ancient writings were hand written on materials that were perishable, such as Papyrus, which was the most common of the many different materials that were used. As a document became old, excessively worn, or increasingly popular, copies were made by hand on new materials. These copies are known as manuscripts and it is very difficult to recover many of them because of the ideal conditions that were necessary to retard their deterioration. Therefore, since we don't have the original documents of any of these early writings, their accuracy must be determined by examining the existing manuscripts.

### *The Manuscripts*

In his book, *Evidence That Demands a Verdict*, Josh McDowell cites the three basic tests used for determining the historical reliability of any ancient piece of literature. These tests were taken from the book, *Introduction in Research in English Literary History*, by C. Sanders. They are known as the Bibliographical Test, The Internal Evidence Test, and The External Evidence Test.<sup>36</sup>

The Bibliographical Test is the first test to be considered and it involves an examination of any existing hand written manuscript copies and their methods of transmission. It takes into consideration the number of existing manuscripts, the time span between the oldest manuscript and the original document, and it considers any discrepancies within the manuscripts when compared to each other. When the Bibliographical Test is applied equally to the Bible and other ancient works, the results become quite astounding.

For example, Plato wrote his tetralogies between 427 and 347 B. C. and there are only *seven* existing manuscripts from which to determine the reliability of these works. The oldest of these seven extant manuscripts dates back to around 900 A.D., which leaves a time span of

*twelve hundred years* between the original work and our oldest copies.<sup>37</sup> How can one be certain that the 900 A.D. hand written copy contains the same words, thoughts, etc... that the original work contained: After all, there is a period of twelve hundred years in which many changes could have occurred?

Caesar's Gallic War was composed around 50 B.C., and there are only ten manuscripts from which we derive our information and teaching concerning Caesar's Gallic War. Moreover, the oldest of these ten manuscripts was still written nine hundred years after the original.<sup>38</sup>

The histories of Pliny, Thucydides, Herodotus, and others are likewise considered to be accurate. Pliny wrote between 61-113 A.D. and yet there are only seven manuscripts of his writings and a time span of seven hundred fifty years exists between the oldest and the original.<sup>39</sup> Thucydides wrote from 460-400 B.C. and only eight manuscripts have been recovered – the oldest being 1300 years removed from the original.<sup>40</sup> And, as for Herodotus, there are also only eight manuscripts and a time span of thirteen hundred years that exists between the oldest and the original.<sup>41</sup>

From the writings of Aristotle, there are no more than five manuscripts of any single work with a gap of fourteen hundred years between the original and the copy.<sup>42</sup> The examples could go on and on – citing similar statistics for all the great classical writers.

It is traditionally believed that the New Testament was written between 45 and 85 A.D., with the book of John being the last book to be completed. However a famous professor by the name of Ferdinand Christian Bauer, formulated some convincing arguments in which he claimed that the Gospel of John was not written until the end of the second century (obviously by someone other than John, the disciple of Jesus). The critics used this "fact" to undermine the reliability of the New Testament.

However, a manuscript was found in Egypt that caused many of these scholars to alter their views. This manuscript is known as the “John Ryland Manuscript” and is located in the John Ryland Library of Manchester England. It is a portion of the Gospel of John and it dates back to 130 A.D. – less than *fifty years* from the time of original authorship.<sup>43</sup> And, since it was found in Egypt (a considerable distance from Ephesus) it has been concluded that the Gospel had to have been written before the end of the first century.

The “Bodmer Papyrus II” Manuscripts date back to within one hundred years of the original authorship and contain almost the entire book of John.<sup>44</sup>

The “Chester Beatty Papyri” contain major portions of the entire New Testament and date back to within one hundred fifty years of original authorship.<sup>45</sup>

The “Codex Sinaiticas” Manuscripts contain all of the New Testament with the exception of a few verses and were written about two hundred years after the original authorship of the New Testament.<sup>46</sup>

These represent only a few examples. Altogether there are more than *thirteen thousand* hand written manuscripts of the New Testament with the oldest dating back to within *fifty years* of the original authorship.<sup>47</sup> There is no other ancient work of literature that even comes close to approaching these statistics. “The Iliad” by Homer, has the second most impressive manuscript record and altogether there are six hundred forty-three extant manuscripts of the Iliad.<sup>48</sup> Although this number is quite superior when compared to other classical works, it is extremely inferior to the New Testament record of more than thirteen thousand.

The Iliad, like the Bible, was considered to be a sacred work; therefore, extreme care would have been taken by those who re-copied

this ancient work. This explains why the textual purity of “The Iliad” is also superior to other classical works.

“The Iliad” has approximately fifteen thousand six hundred lines within its pages. There are some seven hundred sixty-four of these lines that are considered to be questionable, or in which the true meaning is in doubt.<sup>49</sup> (This statistic is based upon an evaluation and comparison of existing manuscripts). Therefore, “The Iliad” has only a five percent textual corruption, which is superior when compared to other ancient literature.

The New Testament contains approximately twenty thousand lines. Of these, there are only forty lines or about four hundred words that are in doubt.<sup>50</sup> This computes to only one half of one percent textual corruption, which is a phenomenal achievement in ancient literature. And, out of these four hundred words that are questionable, not one of them affects the meaning of any major doctrine of the Christian faith.

Some critics have made assertions that the New Testament is full of thousands of discrepancies. What they don't tell people is that they are taking into consideration such things as, words whose spelling have been changed to a more contemporary form, and other insignificant grammatical changes. Plus, if a minor error is found in the same sentence of eight thousand manuscripts, then these critics calculate eight thousand discrepancies in the New Testament record. Statistics like these are not only erroneous; they are blatantly deceitful because, in reality, the New Testament record is 99.5% textually pure.<sup>51</sup>

Bible verses were frequently quoted by the early church writers and many manuscripts have been discovered that contain various quotations and references to the Bible. These extra-Biblical quotations are so numerous, that almost the entire New Testament can be reconstructed from just the quotations.

According to Sir David Dalrymple, if all the Bibles and all the manuscripts in the entire world were destroyed, there would be enough extra-Biblical quotations written within two hundred years of the time of Christ to reproduce all but eleven verses of the whole New Testament.<sup>52</sup>

Sir Frederick Kenyon, one of the greatest authorities in New Testament criticism, has stated, “The number of manuscripts of the New Testament, of early translations from it, and of quotations from it in the oldest writers of the church, is so large that it is practically certain that the true reading of every doubtful passage is preserved in some one or the other of these ancient authorities. This can be said of no other ancient book in the world.”<sup>1</sup>

There is no confusion about what the New Testament writers meant to say. Any confusion that exists among various denominations within the Orthodox Christian structure is a result of human nature because some people cherish certain Bible passages while they willfully ignore others. Some interject thoughts and ideas that were never even considered by the original authors, while others incorporate man-made ceremonies, rituals and rules that were never mentioned within the New Testament.

All Christians are not in complete doctrinal agreement with each other; however, they do agree upon the few basic essentials of the Christian faith. It is these basic essential doctrines that the various cults try to pervert. Because of this, one can be sure that not all people who claim to be Christians are really Christians. Many are involved in cultic systems that blatantly distort and pervert the Scriptures through various clever methods. These cults lead the uninformed person into a system that professes to be Christian, but in reality is the antithesis of Christianity. (Some of these cults will be briefly mentioned later in this book).

---

<sup>1</sup> Kenyon, Frederic G., *Our Bible and the Ancient Manuscripts*, (Harper and Brothers, New York, 1941) P. 23; as quoted by Josh McDowell, *Evidence that Demands a Verdict*, (Campus Crusade for Christ, 1972) P. 45

The existence of different versions of the Bible has also confused people about its reliability. For example, there is the *King James Version*, the *Revised Standard Version*, the *New American Standard Version*, the *New English Version* and several others. However, these versions all convey the same stories, ideas, lessons, etc., that are found within the Greek and Latin manuscripts. The choice of certain words may differ among them, yet they are usually synonymous. There are only some very minor deviations between the different versions and none of them affect any essential doctrine. (There is one exception that will be mentioned in dealing with the cults later in this book). The King James Version, for example, contains a lot of antiquated yet very poetic words within its pages while the New American Standard version uses more contemporary English. Both versions attempt to get the same message across to their readers, even though different words are used.

It should now be evident that the accuracy of the New Testament record is supported by a wealth of manuscript evidence. An unbiased application of the Bibliographical Test, places the New Testament in a superior class of its own. However, the other two tests must now be considered before making an overall evaluation.

### *Internal Evidence*

The *Internal Evidence Test* is an in-depth analysis of the actual content of literature. Its main premise is that the content of a document must be considered to be reliable unless there is absolute, irrevocable proof to the contrary. In other words, any difficulties, and apparent discrepancies, or any problem texts within a document must be carefully examined and cannot be deemed “unreliable” without positive substantiating proof for such a claim. The benefit of the doubt must be given to the document itself.<sup>53</sup>

The New Testament records many miracles that were performed by Christ before multitudes of witnesses. (The possibility of miracles will be addressed in a later chapter). Many modern critics automatically determine these passages to be pure myth because of their preconceived ideas about supernatural occurrences and not because of infallible proof to support their claims. The miracles of the New Testament differ greatly from those found in Greek mythology and other legends because they center on an actual man of history, at actual places in history, during a specific time in history, and before many real witnesses in history. Because of this, some feeble attempts have been made by various critics to even discredit certain names, places, and dates that are recorded in Scripture. However, these attempts have resulted in failure due to the many vindicating achievements of modern archaeology.

Some people have even asserted that the deeds and teachings of Christ can't be trusted because His disciples were the ones who wrote about them and not Christ Himself. The Bible claims that the writings of the disciples were divinely inspired by God, Who enabled the disciples to accurately recall the events and teachings that are recorded in the New Testament. But, even if this Biblical claim is completely discounted, the critics are faced with the fact that many other classical works were not written down by their noted authors. This includes works of Homer, Augustus Caesar, Charlemagne, and others.<sup>54</sup>

The greatest internal support for the accuracy of the New Testaments rests in the fact that the disciples wrote as eye witnesses and then publicly submitted their testimonies before other eye witnesses of the same era. It would not have been very wise to alter historical facts because such alterations would have been easily detected by those who were familiar with the New Testament period.

In their writings, the disciples often emphasized the fact that they were eye witnesses. For example, in the first chapter of Luke, verses

one through three; the New Testament reads; “inasmuch as many have undertaken to compile an account of the things accomplished among us, just as those who from the beginning were *eye witnesses* and servants of the word have handed them down to us, it seemed fitting for me as well, having investigated everything carefully from the beginning, to write it out for you in consecutive order most excellent Theophilus;”

Another example is found in the first chapter of II Peter, verse sixteen which says; “For we did not follow cleverly devised tales when we made known to you the power and coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, but we were *eye witnesses* of His Majesty.”

There are other similar verses recorded in Scripture including some in which the disciples not only claimed to be eye witnesses, but also stated that many of those to whom they were addressing were also eye witnesses. For example: In the second chapter of Acts, verse twenty two states this; “Men of Israel, listen to these words: Jesus the Nazarene, a man attested to you by God with miracles and wonders and signs which God performed through *Him in your midst, just as you yourselves know...*”

Another such example is found in the twenty sixth chapter of Acts, verses 24-26, which states; “And while Paul was saying this in his defense. Festus said in a loud voice, ‘Paul, you are out of your mind! Your great learning is driving you mad!’ But Paul said, ‘I am not out of my mind, most excellent Festus, but I utter words of sober truth. *For the King knows about these matters* and I speak to him also with confidence, since I am persuaded that none of these things escape his notice; *for this has not been done in a corner*’.”

The disciples had to be accurate in their writings because there were many other followers of Christ who loved Him and knew His teachings. These people would have never accepted any falsified account or distorted teachings about Jesus.



The disciples also had to be accurate because there were those who despised Christianity and would have welcomed the opportunity to expose any deviation from the facts. It would have been foolish for the apostles to open the door to their critical opponents by manipulating major facts of history; yet, in the past, the New Testament critics have even called into question, the names of governors, geographic locations and other important items that would have been common knowledge among the people of that era.

### *External Evidence*

The final test for determining the accuracy of a historical document is the External Evidence Test. This test is basically an examination of any sources, apart from the document itself, that would either confirm or deny the accuracy of the document in question. For example, the writings of other authors of the same era would be considered if their subject matter was about, or related to, the particular document. Further considerations would also be given to any archaeological evidence that may substantiate or refute the reliability of the document.

There were many writers who attested to the reliability and accuracy of the Scriptures. Most of these writers were themselves Christians, yet their testimonies still have to be considered, especially since many of them chose to be killed by torture, or endure harsh persecution, rather than change their convictions. However, there were also non-Christians whose writings attest to the accuracy of the Scriptures. These would include such people as the famous historian, Flavius Josephus, and even certain others who were actually antagonistic toward Christianity.

The historian, Eusebius, verifies this point in one of his writings when he says, "So firm is the ground upon which the Gospels rest, that the very heretics themselves bear witness to them, and starting from

these, each one of them endeavors to establish his own particular doctrine.”<sup>54</sup> In other words, the Gospels were so irrefutable, that those who sought to undermine the true Christian faith had to use those very same writings as a base from which to build their own false systems that distorted the spiritual teachings of the Gospels.

Apart from the many extra-Biblical writings that exist, the confirmation of archaeology is probably the most valuable external verification of the New Testament. As previously mentioned, there have been many discoveries that substantiate the authenticity of the New Testament. During the past decades, numerous critical strongholds have been destroyed, along with the foolish logic that was used to defend them.

For example, if the critics were unable to find any mention of particular Biblical names or places in secular literature, they would consider this to be substantial proof that such names and places never existed. They seldom gave the Bible the “benefit of the doubt” (which is a requirement of the Internal Evidence Test).

To cite an example, the New Testament mentions a place called the pool of Bethesda. This was one of many places where Christ was to have performed an extraordinary miracle. The Bible claims that this pool was located in Jerusalem and that it had five porticos. There was no record of it anywhere else in secular literature, so the “Higher Critics” applied the “myth” label to this section of the New Testament. This “myth” label had to be removed when archaeologists discovered this pool in Jerusalem and found that it had five porticos, just as the Bible stated.<sup>55</sup>

The existence of Pontius Pilate, the Roman Governor who sentenced Jesus to death was denied by the critics until archaeological

---

<sup>54</sup> Against Heresies III, Quoted by Josh McDowell, Evidence That Demands A Verdict, (Campus Crusade For Christ, 1972) P. 66

proof of his existence was established.<sup>56</sup> The tax census ordered by Augustus Caesar, as recorded in the Gospel of Luke, was said to have never occurred until irrefutable evidence was established from archaeology that it did indeed occur.<sup>57</sup> The journeys of the Apostle Paul were questioned until the mentioned cities and places were excavated and indentified.<sup>58</sup>

The critics have even gone so far as to question the accuracy of certain political titles that are recorded in the Gospel of Luke. For instance, Luke refers to the Philippian rulers as being “Praetors.” The critics claimed that the town would have been governed by two “Duumvirs” instead. However, even this trivial attempt to undermine the accuracy of the New Testament has been disproven through archaeology.<sup>59</sup>

These represent only a small portion of the many critical stands that have been overturned. They wouldn’t even be worth mentioning if it weren’t for the fact that they have been taught to many students in universities who believed in their validity. What secular students aren’t taught is the fact that there is more evidence for the historical accuracy of the New Testament than any other ancient work. Those who claim that the New Testament is not reliable, should, in all fairness, make the same claim of all other ancient literature. Obviously, it is prejudice, not facts that cause people to reject the New Testament’s historicity.

### *The Old Still Shines*

The historical accuracy of the Old Testament has also been verified by application of the same three tests. The internal and external evidence for the Old Testament has been well established through archaeology. Several examples of Old Testament verification were cited in previous pages of this chapter. However, *on the surface*, the

bibliographical support for the Old Testament is not as impressive as that of the New Testament.

Up until the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls in 1948, the oldest Hebrew manuscript available was dated at about 900 A.D. And since the Old Testament was completed around 400 B.C., this left a gap of thirteen hundred years between the completion date and the oldest manuscript copy. Plus, the quantity of Hebrew manuscripts is found to be no greater than other ancient works of that period.

However, in spite of these seemingly insignificant statistics, the Old Testament is still deemed superior to other ancient writings when the bibliographical test is applied. This is because the bibliographical test not only considers the quantity and age of the manuscripts; it also examines the *method of transmission*. There is a reason why there are so few manuscripts and this reason is discovered when one examines the unique manner in which the Old Testament documents were transcribed.

#### *A Mind for Details*

The ancient Hebrews had a deep reverence for God and the Holy Scriptures. Because of their reverence, the Hebrew Scribes had to abide by many strict rules before they were allowed to copy an Old Testament document. During the Talmudist period for example, (100 A.D.-500 A.D.) the Scribes had to abide by the following rules: First, the Scribe had to wash his entire body and then put on ceremonial clothing. He then was required to write on the skins of “clean” animals—specially prepared by a Jew, expressly for the Synagogue. These skins were then fastened by strings that were likewise made from special “clean” animals.

Once the pages were made from the skins, each page was required to have the same number of columns throughout the entire book. These

columns had to be a specific length and the width had to be exactly thirty letters.

The Scribe was required to use black ink, and he could not write a word or even a single letter from memory. In other words, the Scribe couldn't look at a sentence on the older document and then write that sentence from memory on the new copy. He couldn't even look at a word on the older document and then write that word from memory on the copy. Instead, each single letter had to be written one at a time by a continuous process of comparison between the two documents.

Exact spacing between each letter was also required and whenever the name of God had to be written, a special pen was used. If a king or any other prominent person walked into the room, the Scribe was not allowed to talk to, or even look at that person while transcribing the Old Testament.<sup>60</sup>

The manuscripts were so precise, that once they were completed, they were given equal or greater authority than the older document. This is because the older document would have been more likely to have blemishes from extensive handling and age. If any mistakes were made, any rules violated, or *if a document became excessively worn*, it was destroyed, buried, or given to schools to be used as a reader.<sup>61</sup> It is because of this practice that there is not a great abundance of manuscripts today.

The next period in Jewish history was known as the Massoretic Period (500 A.D.-900 A.D.). Like the Talmudists, the Massorettes also had strict guidelines that they followed when transcribing the Old Testament. Among these was the practice of counting and numbering the verses, words and letters of each Old Testament book. When this was done, they would then calculate and number the center word and the center letter of each of these same books. In addition to this they would also count and record the number of times that each individual letter of

their alphabet occurred within a book and then they would even count the total number of words within their entire Bible and number the center word. All the numbered letters and words had to come out exactly the same when the two documents were compared to each other or else the copy was destroyed and the process started all over again.<sup>62</sup>

In spite of the exacting care that was taken by the Hebrew Scribes, there were still many critics who claimed that today's Massoretic text was unreliable due to the many years of transcribing and the thirteen hundred year gap between the completion date and our oldest copy. So, without any proof, scholars condemned the accuracy of the Old Testament while they accepted the accuracy of other ancient works with less supportive evidence.

However, in the year 1948, a sudden "hush" fell upon many critics when the thirteen hundred year gap was reduced to *three hundred years* with the discovery of the Dead Sea Scrolls. These Scrolls were found in a cave by a shepherd boy, about eight miles south of Jericho. They had been sealed in jars and remained in good condition for almost two thousand years.

These Scrolls contained various writings of the Qumran community including some Old Testament Scriptures. Among these, was found a complete text of the book of Isaiah, dating back to 125 B.C.. Therefore, a comparison was made between the Qumran text and the Massoretic text of 900 A.D., and the two texts were found to be almost identical, with only some minor variations in spelling and a few other trivial differences.<sup>63</sup>

For example, the fifty third chapter of Isaiah contains one hundred sixty-six words, out of which, only *seventeen* letters were questionable. Fourteen of these questionable letters constituted changes in only spelling or grammar. The remaining three letters formed a word which means "light" and they were added to the eleventh verse of this chapter.

Isn't it absolutely incredible to think, that between 125 B.C. and 900 A.D. (a period of more than one thousand years) only three letters were added to this entire chapter of Isaiah?<sup>64</sup>

### *Willful Blindness*

The Dead Sea Scrolls have silenced many critics. However, there are still those who maliciously attack the credibility of the Old Testament simply because they never opened their eyes to the truth. History proves that it doesn't matter how many discoveries are made, or how many arguments are overturned. These critics will always find some excuse for rejecting the Bible. However, this rejection usually stems from an underlying moral issue; or, is merely an outcrop of one's self will, rather than originating out of a problem with the intellect, because too many brilliant scholars, after seeing the wealth of evidence that exists, have embraced the Scriptures without sacrificing one iota of their intellect.

When all evidence is weighed, it becomes apparent that the Bible is not "Merely a Book". The Bible stands separate and above all other books. Throughout history, men and governments have tried to eliminate this book from the face of the earth; yet, in spite of many worldwide campaigns to destroy it, the Bible has survived. Millions of people have been persecuted, tortured and killed because of their love for this book. The Bible has changed the lives of men and women, throughout the world and has even transformed entire civilizations and cultures. It is God's message to humanity, yet, many people in our society, who claim to be searching for truth, will not give it one moment of serious consideration.

### *The Truth:*

*“All Scripture is inspired by God and profitable for teaching, for reproof, for correction, for training in righteousness;” (II Timothy 3:15)*

*“But know this first of all, that no prophecy of Scripture is a matter of one's own interpretation, for no prophecy was ever made by an act of human will, but men moved by the Holy Spirit spoke from God.” (II Peter 1:20,21)*

*“For the word of God is living and active and sharper than any two-edged sword, and piercing as far as the division of soul and spirit, of both joints and marrow, and able to judge the thoughts and intentions of the heart.” (Hebrews 4:12)*

*“The grass withers, the flower fades, But the word of our God stands forever.” (Isaiah 40:8)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)



## II

## JUST A MAN?

***The Lie: Jesus was a good moral teacher but he was not The Son of God***

Since the beginning of recorded history, there have been many great religious leaders and teachers who have influenced the world with their moral and spiritual values. Many people acknowledge the fact that Jesus Christ of Nazareth was one of these great teachers, but they refuse to believe that He is the Son of God and Savior of mankind. Those who formulate this opinion of Jesus have apparently never studied the gospel accounts of His life, because the statements Jesus made about Himself preclude any patronizing view that would place Him in a category with other great men.

Many of His claims were unlike anything that was ever uttered by Buddha, Mohammed, or any other famous religious leader or teacher and such statements could have never been made by a man who was *only* a good moral teacher. Jesus claimed to have the power to forgive sins and to condemn to hell. He said that no person could ever enter the Kingdom of Heaven unless He Himself allowed that person to enter. He also claimed to be co-equal and co-eternal with God the Father, plus He professed to be the Savior, Judge, and ultimate ruler of mankind. The Bible even contains many verses that either directly or indirectly refer to Jesus as being God Himself.

The religious leaders of Jesus' day knew exactly who He had claimed to be, because on various occasions, they attempted to stone Him to death because of His claims. Consider these words of Christ that

are recorded in the eleventh chapter of the gospel of John: "...Jesus answered them, "I showed you many good works from the Father; for which of them are you stoning Me?" The Jews answered Him, "For a good work we do not stone You, but for blasphemy; and because You, being a man, make Yourself out *to be* God." (John 10; 32, 33)

His enemies attested to His many bold claims and His disciples likewise bore witness to His testimony and their encounters with His life. For example, John the disciple wrote; "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the light of men...*And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us*, and we saw His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth." (John1: 1-4, 14)

The enemies of Jesus knew who He claimed to be, His closest friends knew who He claimed to be, and Jesus Himself knew who He claimed to be. Because of His many astounding and unique statements, it is not possible to acknowledge that Jesus was a great moral teacher without also accepting Him as Lord and Savior. If Jesus was nothing more than an ordinary man, His audacious statements would prevent Him from being considered as a good moral teacher. If He was not who He claimed to be, then there are only two other options to consider.

One of the available options would be to believe that Jesus intentionally made claims that He knew were not true. This would mean of course that He must have been the most diabolical deceiver who ever lived because He ultimately managed to deceive millions of people who trusted His statement with their very lives. And, if Jesus was a liar then He also must have been a fool because He allowed Himself to be executed by not renouncing His claims.

The only other possible option is to believe that Jesus was sincerely convinced of His Deity, but, in reality He was self-deluded. This assumption would place Jesus Christ on the same mental level as a man who thinks he is Napoleon and it is inconceivable to think the greatest ethical and moral instructions that the world has ever received, were delivered by a man who was nothing more than a lunatic.

C.S. Lewis, the famous author and once a skeptic of Christianity, summed it up best when he wrote “I am trying here to prevent anyone saying the really foolish thing that people often say about Him: ‘I’m ready to accept Him as a great moral teacher, but I don’t’ accept His claim to be God.’ That is one thing we must not say. A man who was merely a man and said the sort of things Jesus said would not be a great moral teacher. He would either be a lunatic – on a level with the man who says he is a poached egg – or else He would be the Devil of Hell. Either this man was, and is the Son of God; or else a madman or something worse.’

### *Prophecy*

Apart from His teachings, there is yet another aspect of Jesus’ life which separates Him from any other person in history. God gave us a detailed description of the one and only person who would be the Lord and Savior of mankind. The details of this description are found in the writings of the ancient Hebrew prophets and are contained in the Old Testament of the Bible. All of these prophetic clues were written hundreds of years before the life of Christ, yet by using the process of elimination, it is evident that Jesus was the only man in history to whom they could have referred.

Jesus often pointed to the fact that many Old Testament prophecies were being fulfilled in His own life. On one occasion, when He was

---

<sup>1</sup> Lewis, C.S. Mere Christianity (Macmillan Publishing Co. Inc. New York, 1952) P. 55-56

involved in a confrontation with some of the Jewish religious leaders of His day, He made what must have been a shocking statement to them. In the fifth chapter of the gospel of John, Jesus said to them: “You search the Scriptures, because you think that in them you have eternal life; *it is these that testify about me*; and you are unwilling to come to me, so that you may have life..... For if you believed Moses, you would believe me, *for he wrote about me.*” (John 5: 39, 40, 46)

The fulfilled prophecies in the life of Christ are absolutely unique. The Jewish people have had about 40 different people claim to be the long awaited Messiah of the Jewish race but Jesus Christ of Nazareth was the only one of these people who pointed to fulfilled prophecies in His life – *because he was the only one who could.*<sup>1</sup>

### *Seed of the Woman*

The very first prophecy of the promised Messiah is found in the fifteenth verse of Genesis, Chapter three, and it was made shortly after man’s rebellion in the Garden of Eden. In this verse, God refers to the Savior as being *the seed of the woman*. This is a unique description because it is the only place in the Bible where someone is referred to as being *the seed of a woman*. Elsewhere in the Bible people are referred to as being *the seed of the man*.

This prophecy is significant from a Christian perspective because it infers that the Messiah would be born of a woman, yet He would not have an earthly father. This is interesting because the Christian portrayal of Jesus Christ depicts Him as having been born of a virgin – conceived miraculously by God Himself rather than by a man. That is why Jesus was completely human in all respects, while at the same time He was also the incarnate Son of God.

This incarnation is obviously an event which cannot be proven to anyone but it is interesting to note that the Christian concept of Christ's birth correlates with the very first Messianic prophecy in the Bible.

To many reader's, this verse in Genesis seems vague and insignificant, therefore, they assume that Christians must have labeled it a "Messianic prophecy" in order to coincide with their concept of Jesus. This assumption is incorrect because there are ancient *Jewish* rabbinic sources that declare this passage to be a definite prediction of the promised Messiah. However, it must be admitted that certain prophecies, like this one, are difficult to ascertain without having a thorough knowledge of the criterion which determines whether or not a particular verse is actually prophetic. However, there are many other verses pertaining to the Messiah which are very obvious and will be much easier to understand.

### *Lineage*

By using the process of elimination when examining the Messianic prophecies, it becomes evident that there is only one man who fits the prophetic description. For example, the book of Genesis states that Noah had three sons named Ham, Shem, and Japheth. Since Noah and his family were the only human survivors of the universal flood, all of the nations of the ancient world can theoretically be traced back to his three sons.\* The Bible states that the Messiah would come from the lineage of Shem, which means that two thirds of the people on earth would automatically have to be eliminated as possible candidates for the role of Messiah.

The twenty second chapter of Genesis narrows the selection down even further by stating that the nations of the world would be blessed

---

\* The Noahic flood has been the object of ridicule during the past several decades, yet there is more evidence proving that this flood actually did occur than one could scarcely imagine. This subject will be addressed in part II of this book.

through the seed of Abraham. Abraham was the father of the Jewish race through his wife Sarah; therefore, all of the races in the lineage of Shem would have to now be eliminated as possible candidates except for those of one specific race, the Jews.

Abraham had two sons named Isaac and Ishmael. In the twenty first chapter of Genesis, it is learned that the Messiah would come from the lineage of Isaac. This means that one half of Abraham's descendants would also have to be excluded from the Messianic line.

Isaac had two sons called Jacob and Esau. In the twenty fourth chapter of the book of numbers, there is a prophecy which says that Israel's conquering Lord would arise from the lineage of Jacob. Therefore, this prediction eliminates one-half of the descendants of Isaac from consideration.

Jacob had twelve sons from whom the twelve different tribes of Israel were formed. The forty ninth chapter of Genesis states that the Messiah would come from the tribe of Judah. Therefore, this prophecy eliminates 11/12<sup>ths</sup> of Jacob's descendants from being considered for the role of Messiah.

The eleventh chapter of the book of Isaiah contains some verses which indicate that the Savior would come from the family line of Jesse (who belonged to the tribe of Judah). Therefore, out of all the families within the tribe of Judah, the Messiah had to come from the family of Jesse.

Now Jesse had at least eight sons, one of whom became the most famous king in the history of Israel. This king's name was David and the Bible states in several different places that the Messiah would come from the "House of David."

The Jews used to keep all of their family genealogies on record in their temple. Because of this, the Jewish religious leaders were unable to contest the fact that Jesus was of the Messianic lineage because such

information was a matter of public record. Obviously, if they had been able to disprove the lineage of Christ, they would have. (It is interesting to note that in 70 A.D., just forty years after the death of Christ, Titus of Rome destroyed the Jewish temple and all of its records. After 70 A.D., if anyone had attempted to proclaim themselves to be Messiah, it would have been impossible to prove their lineage since the official records were no longer available).

### *Bethlehem*

In addition to the genealogical requirements which Jesus fulfilled, the Old Testament contains many other specific prophecies that were fulfilled in the life of Christ. For example, the prophet Micah predicted that the Messiah would be born in a small town called Bethlehem. This is an interesting prediction because Jesus would never have been born in this obscure town if Augustus Caesar, the Roman emperor, had not issued a proclamation which required a census to be taken for the purpose of taxation.

In the year that Jesus was born, His mother Mary, and her husband Joseph, were required to comply with the proclamation by returning to their ancestral homeland to register for the census. Mary and Joseph were living in Nazareth prior to this time but were forced to travel to the town of their traditional ancestry which, in their case, was Bethlehem.

The fact that Jesus was born in Bethlehem during this visit was never contested by His enemies. There is no room for modern skepticism about His birth place either because archaeologists have proven that Ceasar Augustus actually did require a census that forced Jewish people to return to their tribal homeland. Therefore, because of some well-timed and unusual circumstances, Jesus was born in Bethlehem, yet he was still called Jesus of Nazareth because Nazareth

was actually his home town.

### *Characteristics*

Prophecy also states that the ministry of the Messiah would begin in Galilee; that He would be preceded by a messenger in the wilderness; that he would teach in parables; and that He would perform miracles. The ministry of Jesus did begin in Galilee; He was preceded and attested to by a messenger in the wilderness called John the Baptist; his teachings were often in parables; and He is noted for having performed many miracles.

It is interesting to note that Jesus performed many miracles in the presence of His enemies; and, since His enemies were unable to refute the validity of His miraculous healings, they often accused Jesus of working miracles by the power of Satan instead of by the power of God. (The possibility of His miracles will be further discussed in the following chapter).

The Old Testament also states that the Messiah would be rejected by His own people and would become a “light unto the Gentiles. The person of Jesus Christ certainly coincides with this prediction because he has definitely been rejected by the Orthodox Jewish community and has become a hope of salvation for the Gentiles (Non-Jews).

### *Betrayal*

The prophet Zechariah stated that the Savior would enter Jerusalem on a donkey; that he would be betrayed by a friend for thirty pieces of silver; that this money would be thrown down on the temple floor and would ultimately be used to buy a potter’s field.

Just as prophesied, Jesus of Nazareth, shortly before His trial and



execution, did enter Jerusalem by riding on a donkey. He was accompanied by a large crowd of people who were chanting “Hosanna to the Son of David; Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord;” (KJV) And, not long after His triumphant procession into Jerusalem, Judas, one of His twelve disciples, was persuaded by the Jewish religious authorities to betray Jesus for the exact price of thirty pieces of silver.

After Jesus was taken prisoner and put on trial, Judas felt great remorse for his sinful deed so he tried to return the money which was given to him for the betrayal. When the Jewish authorities refused to take back the money, because it was against their laws to do so, Judas threw the thirty pieces of silver into the sanctuary and then went out and hung himself.

The religious authorities could not put blood money into their treasury, therefore, they took the money that Judas had cast down and they decided to buy a potter’s field that was used as a burial place for strangers.

Isn’t it remarkable that such a detailed description of this betrayal was recorded more than 500 years before the birth of Christ by Zechariah? What is even more amazing is that the coinage during the time of Zechariah was made of gold and not silver, yet the prophet stepped into the future and said that thirty pieces of *silver* would be thrown down in the temple.<sup>2</sup>

### *Rejection*

The prophet Isaiah predicted that the Jewish Messiah would be rejected by his people; that he would be mocked and spit upon; that he would be bruised and wounded; and that out of his afflictions, he would

pay the penalty for sin.

The sixth verse of Isaiah, chapter 50, also says; “I gave my back to those who strike me, and my cheeks to those who pluck out the beard; I did not cover my face from humiliation and spitting.” Six hundred years after these words were written, Jesus was beaten, humiliated, and was spit upon during His two mock trials before His execution, yet he did not try to resist those who were abusing Him.

The fifty third chapter of Isaiah also contains a graphic portrayal of a man who would suffer and pay a penalty for sins which he did not commit. This chapter is no longer read in Jewish synagogues because the description of this suffering Messiah had been instrumental in causing many Jews to turn from Judaism to Christianity.

Consider some of these verses in the fifty third chapter of Isaiah; “He is despised and rejected of men; A man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief; and we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised and we esteemed him not. Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows; yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities; the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned everyone to his own way; and the Lord hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.” (Isaiah 53: 3-6 KJV).

Once again, just as it had been prophesied centuries before, history confirms that Jesus Christ was wounded, bruised, whipped and killed, as He took upon Himself, the sins of the entire world, including the sins of those who despised and rejected Him.

*Suffering*

The twenty second Psalm also provides some graphic details about the suffering role of the Messiah and His manner of death. This Psalm was written by King David who apparently received a vivid, futuristic vision of what the Messiah Himself would someday experience. David must have been spiritually transported into the future and allowed to view and actually experience some of the circumstances which would surround the execution of the coming Savior because he writes as if they were his very own experiences.

The prophetic nature of this Psalm is obvious because the execution and suffering which David describes was never actually experienced by him. Although modern Jewish Rabbis deny that this Psalm is referring to the Messiah, there are several ancient Jewish references which indicate that Psalm twenty two pertains to the promised Messiah.<sup>3</sup> (It is obvious why modern Rabbis deny that this passage speaks of the Messiah because it vividly describes the scenes which surrounded the death of Christ).

Psalm twenty two states that the Messiah would be mocked; that he would have his hands and his feet pierced; that his bones would be out of joint; that he would be stared upon; that his outer garments would be divided up and his clothing would be gambled for; that he would suffer thirst; and would utter a forsaken cry.

Consider some of these verses in Psalm twenty two: “My God, my God, why have you forsaken me?.... But I am a worm and not a man, a reproach of men and despised by the people. All who see me sneer at me; They separate with the lip, they wag the head saying, ‘commit yourself to the Lord; let him deliver him, let him rescue him because he delights in him’ . . . . They open wide their mouth at me, as a ravening and roaring lion. I am poured out like water, and all my bones are out of joint; My heart is like wax, it is melted within me. My strength is dried

up like a potsherd, and my tongue cleaves to my jaws; And you lay me in the dust of death. For dogs have surrounded me; A band of evildoers has encompassed me; They pierced my hands and my feet. I can count all my bones. They look, they stare at me; They divide my garments among them, and for my clothing they cast lots.” (Psalm 22: 1, 6-8, 13-18).

The scene that is portrayed by the Psalmist coincides with the New Testament record of Jesus Christ’s crucifixion. Consider how some of these Old Testament verses relate to the New Testament Gospel accounts.

“*My God, my God, why have You forsaken me?*” (Psalm 22:1). The New Testament account of Matthew states: “ About the ninth hour Jesus cried out with a loud voice saying “*ELI ELI LAMA SABACHTHANI*”? that is “*MY GOD, MY GOD WHY HAVE YOU FORSAKEN ME*”? (Matthew 27:46).

God the Father had to forsake His only begotten Son because Jesus took upon Himself all the evil and corruption of the entire human race. In bearing the punishment for the sins of the world, Jesus had to temporarily experience the hopeless despair of being lost and totally separated from God the Father.

...“*They pierced My hands and My feet*” (Psalm 22:16). One of the most horrible aspects of crucifixion was that the victims sometimes had their hands and feet nailed to the cross. It is apparent that Jesus was nailed to a cross because in the Gospel accounts, he shows His disciples the nail marks in His hands after His resurrection.

“...*all My bones are out of joint*” (Psalm 22:14). Another excruciating experience associated with crucifixion was the dislocation of bone joints due to muscular fatigue caused by a person’s own body weight.

“*I am poured out like water. . .*” (Psalm 22:14). Being directly

exposed to the direct heat of the desert sun, and suffering the terrible agony of such a cruel punishment would cause profuse perspiration and subsequent dehydration.

“...*My heart is like wax; It is melted within Me*” (Psalm 22:14). Many medical experts believe that Jesus’ heart ruptured from the physical pain and stress of crucifixion. The reasons for this belief are based upon a careful study of the various internal causes of death which would result from crucifixion.

The Apostle John was an eyewitness to the event and he stated that a Roman soldier thrust his spear into Christ’s side and “Immediately there came out blood and water.” John wouldn’t have realized the significance of his observation but many medical experts agree that the flow of blood, followed by a flow of water, could indicate that Christ was already dead and that His death was probably due to a ruptured heart.<sup>4</sup>

“*My strength is dried up like a potsherd, and My tongue cleaves to My jaws...*” (Psalm 22:15). The crucifixion of Christ left Him dehydrated and without strength. Just before Jesus died, He stated that He was thirsty, so, some Roman soldiers dipped a sponge into a wine vinegar solution and raised it to His lips. This is an interesting incident because the twenty first verse of the sixty ninth Psalm states: “...*And for my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.*”

“*All who see me sneer at me; They separate with the lip, they wag the head, saying, ‘commit yourself to the Lord; let Him deliver him; Let Him rescue him, because he delights in him’ ...* (Psalm 22:7,8). When Jesus was crucified He was ridiculed by many of the Jewish religious leaders who witnessed His sufferings. The historical account of Matthew says: “In the same way the chief priests also, along with the scribes and elders, were mocking Him and saying, ‘He saved others; He

cannot save Himself. He is the King of Israel; *let Him now come down from the cross, and we shall believe in Him. He trusts in God; Let Him deliver Him now if he takes pleasure in Him*; For he said, ‘I am the Son of God’.” (Matthew 27:41-43)

“*They divide My garments among them, and for My clothing they cast lots.*” (Psalm 22:18). The Roman soldiers, who crucified Jesus, divided His outer garments into four pieces and each of them took a separate section. The tunic which Christ wore had been woven into one seamless piece, so the soldiers decided to cast lots (gamble) for it rather than divide it. (This incident is recorded in the nineteenth- chapter of the Gospel according to John).

It is incredible to think that such exacting details of Christ’s death were written by King David almost *1000 years* before the birth of Jesus. This Psalm vividly describes the horrible agony of a person experiencing the mortal punishment of crucifixion. But, what is even more amazing is that crucifixion was virtually unknown to the Jews until 400 years after this Psalm was written<sup>5</sup> because the Jewish form of capital punishment was death by stoning during the time of King David.

### *More Details*

There are other prophecies in the Old Testament which state that the Messiah would be executed with thieves; that His side would be pierced; that He would be buried in a rich man’s grave and that He would finally be resurrected back to life.

Jesus Christ was indeed crucified with thieves; a Roman soldier thrust his spear into His side; He was buried in a rich man’s tomb; and, according to the facts of history, Jesus was resurrected from the dead. (The controversy concerning the resurrection will be discussed in the

following section). Altogether, the Old Testament contains more than 300 Messianic prophecies which were fulfilled in the life of Jesus Christ.

### *Skepticism*

Many people have attempted to discount the miraculous phenomenon of fulfilled prophecy in the life of Christ by contriving some very shallow explanations. A very common explanation among skeptics goes somewhat like the following: ‘Jesus studied the Old Testament prophecies and then He intentionally manipulated circumstances to achieve their fulfillment within His own life.’

It would have been possible for Jesus to intentionally fulfill some of the Messianic prophecies, but certainly not *300* of them, especially since many of the prophecies that were fulfilled by Christ were totally out of His realm of control. For example, He had no way of manipulating the prophecies concerning His lineage; His birth place, the circumstances which resulted from His betrayal; His manner of death; the circumstances surrounding His death; His burial place; etc. . .

In another attempt to explain away the fulfillment of prophecy in Christ’s life, some critics might say: “Many of these prophecies could have been written down *after* Christ’s death by His followers.”

This is a foolish argument because the entire Old Testament was completed 400 years before Christ was born. Archaeology has proven that many of the prophecies were written more than a thousand years before Christ. Even the Greek translation of the Hebrew Old Testament was completed more than 200 years before Jesus was born.

Other critics try to say that the prophecies were fulfilled by Jesus merely as a result of coincidence. They claim that there have probably been many other people in history who have fulfilled the same prophecies. However, this argument is the most absurd argument of all! A few of the Messianic prophecies could have been fulfilled by other

people in history but not all 300 of them.

In his book, “Evidence that Demands a Verdict,” Josh McDowell illustrates how ridiculous this argument really is. He cites some statistics and quotations that were made by Peter Stoner in “Science Speaks” (Moody Press 1963), because Stoner used the science of probability to determine what the odds would be for any man in history to have fulfilled just **eight** of the sixty *major* Messianic prophecies. And, after considering all the variables, he determined that the chances for any one man to have fulfilled these certain eight prophecies since the time they were written, is one chance in  $10^{17}$ .

He illustrates how large this number is by saying: “We take  $10^{17}$  silver dollars and lay them on the face of Texas. They will cover all of the state two feet deep. Now mark one of these silver dollars and stir the whole mass thoroughly, all over the state. Blindfold a man and tell him that he can travel as far as he wishes, but he must pick up one silver dollar and say that this is the right one. What chance would he have of getting the right one? Just the same chance that the prophets would have had of writing these eight prophecies and having them all come true in any one man, from their day to the present time, providing they wrote them in their own wisdom.”

Stoner also determined that the odds of having 48 of these major prophecies come true in any man’s life would be one chance in  $10^{157}$  (the entire known universe can only hold  $10^{130}$  electrons). Therefore, the prophets could not have been writing these prophecies out of their own wisdom. Their inspiration had to come from the one and only Omniscient God who knew what would take place in the life of His Son Jesus.

As previously stated, since some prophecies are a little difficult to

---

<sup>1</sup> Peter Stoner as quoted by Josh McDowell, Evidence that Demands a verdict (Campus Crusade for Christ, Inc., San Bernadino CA. 1972) P. 175



comprehend, the critics will often accuse Christians of making prejudicial judgments in determining what is, and what is not a Messianic prophecy. They believe that Christians identify certain Old Testament verses as being Messianic prophecies, simply because there may be some obscure details in the verse which can be correlated with the life of Christ. However, this argument is no more valid than the other arguments because a great number of these prophecies have already been categorized as "Messianic" by many Jewish Rabbis.

Josh McDowell, in his book "Evidence that Demands a Verdict," and Hal Lindsey, in his book "The Promise," list many Jewish Rabbinic sources which verify that a great number of these predictions that were fulfilled by Jesus are truly Messianic prophecies. Much of this rabbinic documentation is taken from ancient writings because most modern Rabbis have been pre-conditioned to deny the validity of certain prophecies, even though their forefathers identified them as such. (Many of the predictions which came true in Christ cannot be denied, even by modern Rabbis, as pertaining to the Messiah).

The question is often asked; "If Jesus was really the Messiah, why did the Jewish religious leaders of His day reject Him?" Since the ancient Rabbis were well-acquainted with the Old Testament Scriptures, it does seem strange that they would reject the one person whom the Jewish people had been so earnestly awaiting.

Many Christian scholars believe that the Jewish people, as a whole, rejected Jesus because they did not understand that many of the Messianic prophecies were referring to *two different periods in history*. The prophets often portrayed the Messiah as a suffering servant but there are a great number of verses which depict Him as a conquering Lord who will forever deliver the nation of Israel from her enemies and oppressors.

The Jews had some difficulty in trying to understand how two

drastically different portraits of the Messiah could possibly be referring to the same person. Sometimes these two different Messianic portraits were found within the very same passage of Scripture. Also, there were many more prophecies that portrayed the Messiah as a conquering king than there were those which portrayed Him as a suffering servant.

The answer to this dilemma is found in the fact that during the life of Christ, the Jewish people were desperately looking for a political and military deliverer because they were being oppressed by the Roman Government. The Jewish religious leaders had been given authority over their own people by the Roman Government but they longed to have even greater power. They were looking for a Messiah who would rise up and deliver them from their oppressors, as long as he didn't try to destroy their own inner circle of power.

The religious leaders were looking for a great conquering Lord and were willfully ignoring the prophecies about a person who would have to suffer and pay a price for their sins. Some had become so self-righteous, and so caught up in their religious system that they actually believed they were attaining righteousness through their ceremonies, sacrifices, and outward observance of their laws.

When Jesus Christ confronted them and told them that their entire religious system had become corrupt, and that they themselves were sinners who needed to repent, it infuriated them! Because of their self-righteousness, they chose to ignore the verses about the Messiah who would have to make atonement for their sins and they were only considering the prophecies about a conquering Lord.

Jesus Christ certainly didn't satisfy their expectations of a conquering Messiah. He was a threat to their whole religious and political system, rather than an asset. Because He was a threat, the religious leaders plotted to kill Him and in doing so, fulfilled many predictions from their ancient prophets.

What the Jews didn't understand is that the *same* Messiah would fulfill *two* separate roles by making *two* separate appearances in history. In His first coming, He would come as a sacrificial lamb; in His second coming, He would arrive as the King of Kings and Lord of Lords who would no longer allow Himself to be humiliated, mocked and ridiculed. He would come as the eternal ruler and judge of all mankind.

Christians are convinced that Jesus Christ is alive and is coming back to this earth to fulfill His role as the conquering Messiah. Those who are skeptical of this conviction will find sufficient reasons to substantiate this belief in the next two sections of this book.

Most modern Jews reject Christ because they have never been presented with the truth about His life. (Plus, at various points in history, many suffered unspeakable atrocities at the hands of so called "Christians" who were ravenous wolves in sheep's clothing.) Many lies, hurtful truths, and racial prejudices have been passed from one generation to another within the Jewish community and have prevented most Jews from even considering that Jesus Christ may be their true Messiah. Yet, the Bible says that in the days shortly before the Messiah returns, many Jews will realize that Jesus Christ *is* their Messiah and they will turn to Him and receive forgiveness and everlasting life.

The true Gospel of Christ is reaching many Jews in our modern age and there are thousands upon thousands of them who are committing their lives to Christ. All through history there has always been a small remnant of Jews who have believed in Jesus Christ but there has never been such a great movement toward Jesus among Jewish people as that which is occurring today.

The Jewish people and those of every race, religion and nation will someday realize that Jesus of Nazareth is much more than a good moral teacher. His statements, His actions, and the fulfillment of prophecy within His life, all indicate that there has never been a religious leader or

teacher who could be compared to Jesus. His life has had more of an impact upon human history than any other life since the beginning of time. There have been more books, more poems, and more songs written about Jesus than any other person in history. It is absolutely amazing to consider that a man, who spent such a short time on earth and died as a common criminal, would have more impact upon history than any person who ever walked upon the face of the planet. Surely this man Jesus must have been exactly who He claimed to be, the Eternal Lord of Life and Savior of Mankind.

### ***The Truth:***

*“Jesus said to him, “I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to **the** Father but through Me.” (John 14:6)*

*Jesus said to them, “I am the bread of life; he who comes to Me will not hunger, and he who believes in Me will never thirst. (John 6:35)*

*“I and the Father are one.” (Words of Jesus as recorded in John 10:30)*

*Then Jesus again spoke to them, saying, “I am the Light of the world; he who follows Me will not walk in the darkness, but will have the Light of life.”  
(John 8:12)*

*“I am the good shepherd; the good shepherd lays down His life for the sheep.” (John 10:11)*

*“Jesus said to them, “Truly, truly, I say to you, before Abraham was born, **I AM.**” (John 8:58)*

*“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word **was God.** He was in the beginning with God. All things came into*

*being through Him, and apart from Him nothing came into being that has come into being. In Him was life, and the life was the Light of men.....**And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us, and we saw His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth**” (John 1:1-4; 14)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## III

## DEAD AND GONE?

*The Lie: Jesus was never raised from the dead.*

During His earthly ministry, Jesus Christ performed many great miracles in the presence of many eyewitnesses. On several occasions, people who had been physically disabled from birth were completely healed by Jesus, and because of this fact, even the enemies of Christ were unable to deny that He was achieving the miraculous. However, the Jewish religious leaders sometimes accused Jesus of working miracles by the power of Satan because they were unable to disprove or explain away supernatural events.

The contemporaries of Christ were convinced of His supernatural power, but modern skeptics deny His miracles because of their preconceived ideas about supernatural events. The historical accuracy of the Bible is often disregarded whenever supernatural phenomenon is recorded because most people have never experienced such phenomenon in their own lives and therefore assume that such things are impossible. The critic usually demands empirical proof for the miracles of Jesus, yet he never questions other historical events which have far less substantiating evidence.

*Show Us a Sign!*

There is one event recorded in the Bible upon which all the other miracles of Christ will either stand or fall. If this particular event could somehow be substantially proven, then the miraculous ministry of Jesus would have to be accepted in its entirety. Jesus Himself revealed the

importance of this one particular miracle on several different occasions during His ministry.

On one of these occasions He was approached by some, of the Jewish religious leaders who asked Him to show them a “sign.” These men had more than likely witnessed, or at least seen the results of His miracles of physical healing. But, they may have wanted additional evidence of His authority by having Him perform a miracle similar to those which were accomplished through Moses or Elijah in the Old Testament. Or, they may have wanted to see one of the signs from heaven that were associated with the coming of the *conquering Messiah*.

Their attitudes were probably somewhat sarcastic when they made this request for a “sign” because Jesus replied to them: “An evil and adulterous generation craves for a sign; and yet no sign shall be given to it but the sign of Jonah the prophet; for just as Jonah was three days and three nights in the belly of the sea monster, so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.” (Matthew 12:39, 40). In other words, just as the prophet Jonah was swallowed up by a great fish and then was spewed out alive after three nights, Jesus was saying that He would be buried in the earth and would come forth from His grave after three days and three nights.

The Apostle John wrote about another occasion in which Jesus was asked to show a sign. John gives this account of the incident: “The Jews then said to Him, “What sign do You show us as your authority for doing these things?” Jesus answered them, “Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.” The Jews then said, “It took forty-six years to build this temple, and will You raise it up in three days?” But He was speaking of the temple of his body.” (John 2:18-21).

Jesus performed many miracles that attested to Him being the Messiah, but the one miracle that He offered as final proof to all of the skeptics was the miracle of His own bodily resurrection from the dead.

### *Resurrection or Fraud ?*

The resurrection of Jesus Christ was either the greatest and most important miracle that the world has ever experienced or else it was the most deceitful and cruel hoax that has ever been foisted upon mankind. If Jesus Christ wasn't raised from the dead, then the entire Christian faith has no validity whatsoever. True Christianity can only exist if Jesus was physically resurrected from the dead because the entire Christian faith is centered around, and depends totally upon, a personal relationship with the living Christ who conquered sin and death when He *physically* arose from the dead.

The founders of other major religions are dead and their bodies still remain entombed. These religions are composed of philosophical teachings and ethical values that will allegedly assist a person in paving his or her own road to Heaven. However, Jesus made it perfectly clear that people are incapable of attaining Heaven by their own merits and good works. He placed the whole basis of salvation upon His own unique life; His death; and His bodily resurrection.

The entire Christian Gospel depends upon having faith in a living Lord and Savior and not upon adhering to a particular system of religion. In his first letter to the Corinthians, the Apostle Paul wrote; "Now if Christ is preached that He has been raised from the dead, how do some among you say that there is no resurrection of the dead? But if there is no resurrection of the dead, not even Christ has been raised; and if Christ has not been raised, then our preaching is vain and your faith also is vain." (I Corinthians 15:12-14).

Throughout the years, many prominent scholars have tried to accumulate enough evidence to disprove the resurrection because they



realized how vital it was to Christianity. However, in several cases, those who set out to destroy Christianity became devout believers in Jesus since they discovered a wealth of evidence in favor of the resurrection rather than opposed to it.

To site one example; a famous Harvard law professor by the name of Simon Greenleaf, was challenged to put the gospel accounts of the New Testament on trial, so to speak, by judging their validity according to the same procedures and criterion that a courtroom would use when evaluating legal evidence.

Dr. Greenleaf, after studying the gospels, realized that their entire credibility depended upon the bodily resurrection of Jesus. He therefore focused his attention upon the resurrection itself and began to examine the evidence. After many long hours of research, Simon Greenleaf committed his life to Jesus Christ because he came to the conclusion that the resurrection of Jesus is one of the most well-established facts of history.<sup>1</sup>

There have been other great men who earnestly tried to refute the resurrection and then later became dedicated Christians in the process. Many of these men (including Simon Greenleaf) went on to write books pertaining to the validity of the resurrection. These scholars reversed their antagonistic opinions of Jesus and Christianity because they were intellectually *honest* men who were willing to recognize the facts, even if those facts contradicted their own presupposed ideas.

However, other skeptics of Christianity have not been so intellectually honest. This fact becomes evident upon examination of some of the ludicrous theories that have been devised by intelligent people, apparently out of desperation, in order to refute the resurrection of Jesus.

As a matter of fact, one of the best ways to demonstrate the reality of Christ's resurrection is to closely analyze the various theories which

have been contrived to explain it away. A close scrutinization of these alternative theories will reveal that their proponents are completely oblivious to the facts.

### *An Unconscious Tale*

The first theory for consideration is known as the “Swoon Theory.” This theory was first made popular a couple of centuries ago by a man named Venturini. Since that time, it has undergone some slight revisions by various people and one of the most recent modifications of this theory was made by Schonfield in his book entitled “The Passover Plot.” (However, in this case, the “swoon” was planned ahead of time but Christ actually dies instead.)

According to the original swoon theory, Christ didn’t actually die upon the cross. He was indeed crucified and endured great pain and suffering, but he “swooned” before he was actually dead. And, since medical knowledge was not very advanced during the time of Christ, He was taken down from the cross because He was believed to be dead; He was then laid in a sepulcher, and the cold dampness of the tomb revived Him from this death-like state. After He regained consciousness, Jesus then managed to escape from the tomb and reveal Himself to His disciples, who then proclaimed Him to be the Resurrected Lord and Savior.

Obviously the entire swoon theory is more elaborate than what has just been put forth, but the basic conclusions are the same—Jesus didn’t die so therefore He wasn’t resurrected. The swoon theory may sound feasible until a close examination is made of the circumstances which surrounded the crucifixion and Resurrection of Christ. It is important to consider many details before evaluating the swoon theory or any other theories that will be mentioned in this chapter.

The first set of circumstances to consider are those which are related to Christ's execution: According to historical record, Jesus did not sleep during the night preceding His crucifixion. His disciples kept falling asleep but Jesus Himself had been earnestly praying until the time of His arrest. Jesus then underwent two mock trials where His accusers spit upon Him, humiliated Him and beat Him with their fists and with sticks. In addition to His two separate beatings, Jesus also received a Roman scourging with a "cat-o'-nine tails." One single lash from this whip-like instrument tore out pieces of flesh in nine different places. Jewish law placed a limit of forty lashes upon scourging but Jesus was punished under Roman law which had no such limit.<sup>2</sup>

When Jesus was finally led away to be crucified, He was so weak that He was unable to carry His own cross. Normally a sentenced criminal was required to carry his own cross bar for a distance; but, another man was required to carry the cross of Jesus because of His physically weakened condition. Once He arrived at a place called Golgotha, the Roman soldiers then attached Jesus to the cross by driving large spikes through His wrists and ankles.

For many years, historical scholars claimed that people were never nailed to a cross. They insisted that victims were always bound to a cross with ropes because there was no extra-Biblical evidence that proved otherwise. However, in 1968 an archaeological discovery, dating back to the first century, was made in East Jerusalem that proved that victims were sometimes nailed to a cross.

An archaeologist by the name of V. Tzaferis discovered some chests which contained the bones of people who had been removed from their original burial site and were placed in a different location. One chest contained the bones of a man who had obviously been crucified. Furthermore, one of the actual spikes was found in the chest and it apparently had struck a knot when it was driven into the wood because

the tip was curled backwards and still had splinters of olive wood clinging to it.<sup>3</sup> Therefore, it is safe to assume that Jesus was nailed to the cross, just as the record states.

As Jesus hung upon the cross, His tendons and ligaments were stretched and torn; His bones were pulled out of joint by His body weight and He endured the most excruciating pain and thirst imaginable. In order to breathe, He had to use whatever strength was left in His legs to raise Himself enough for the weakened and stretched-out muscles of His chest to operate His lungs.

After hours of torture, if a victim was not yet dead, the Roman soldiers would sometimes break his legs because this would cause immediate suffocation. Therefore, after hanging on the cross for more than three hours, the Jewish religious leaders asked the Roman soldiers to break the legs of those who were being crucified because it was their day of preparation before the Sabbath and they didn't want bodies to remain upon the cross during the Sabbath. (Usually, crucified bodies were left to hang upon a cross to be devoured by birds and animals, but since Jewish law required burial, they agreed to break with tradition in Jesus' case.)

The soldiers broke the legs of those who were crucified with Jesus but when they came to Christ, they saw that He was already dead so they did not break His legs. (When they refrained from breaking His legs, another Messianic prophecy was fulfilled because the twentieth verse of the thirty-fourth Psalm states: "He keeps all His bones; Not one of them is broken.") However, just to be absolutely sure that Jesus was dead; a Roman Soldier thrust his spear upward into Jesus' side causing blood and water to come forth in a separated state. (The significance of the fact that blood and water came out separated was noted in the last chapter as being evidence that Christ was truly dead).

In spite of the fact that the New Testament is the most historically

accurate piece of ancient literature, many skeptics will totally disregard any recorded facts that may interfere with their own particular theory about Christ's death. Those who ignore the recorded facts about Christ's previous weakened condition and the spear being thrust into His side, are still faced with some insurmountable problems because crucifixion was such a heinous, horrible punishment, that chances for surviving it would have been almost impossible for even the healthiest of men.

There is only one account in ancient history in which a man was known to have survived an actual crucifixion. In this particular case, three men were crucified together and an influential person managed to persuade the governor to reverse his sentence and remove them all from their crosses. The men had only been hanging one or two hours and yet two of them still died! <sup>4</sup>

Another factor which has to be considered is the fact that four professional Roman executioners signed Christ's death warrant. These men were very familiar with death and they would not have risked their lives upon even the slightest possibility of Jesus being alive. A Roman soldier took his work seriously because they were often put to death for making even the slightest errors. Therefore, it is safe to assume that Jesus actually died upon the cross to which He was nailed.

After Jesus was removed from the cross, His body was wrapped in a linen cloth and then it was taken away by a rich man named Joseph of Arimethea to be prepared for burial. The nineteenth chapter of John's Gospel states that the body of Jesus was wrapped in linen cloths and was prepared with spices in a manner according to the burial customs of the Jews.

The Jews used to take rolls of linen bandages and individually wrap the legs, arms, and body of a deceased person. However, the head was not wrapped in bandages because of superstition; instead, a napkin-

like cloth was placed around the head. Therefore, after a body had been prepared, it looked much like a human cocoon.

John's Gospel also states that a man named Nicodemus brought one hundred pounds of myrrh and aloes (spices) which were used to prepare the body. These spices would have been mixed into a gummy consistency and then applied to the bandages in layers as the body was being wrapped. This mixture of spices would have then dried to form a hard shell around the body.

These spices were extremely expensive and many people have scoffed at the idea of one hundred pounds being used to prepare Christ's body. And, although it is true that normally this amount of spices would not have been used to bury the average person, Jesus had some wealthy secret admirers who finally stepped forth and buried Him with honor. Such extravagance was not uncommon among the wealthy because history records other instances where men were buried with great amounts of spices. For example, eighty pounds of spices were used to prepare the body of Gamaliel and hundreds of pounds were used for King Herod's burial.<sup>5</sup>

After its preparation, Jesus' body was laid in a rock hewn tomb in a garden near the place where He was crucified. This tomb belonged to Joseph of Arimethea and apparently it had never been used before. When Jesus' body was placed in the tomb, a huge stone was then rolled against the entrance to seal it.

A second century manuscript of the Gospel of Mark has a marginal note regarding the size of this stone. The transcriber's marginal note says that the stone was so large that twenty men couldn't have moved it.<sup>6</sup> The average rock hewn tomb had a rectangular entrance of about 3 ½ X 4½ feet; therefore, the average stone slab which was used to seal a tomb of this type has been calculated, by engineers, to weigh anywhere from 3000 to 4000 pounds.<sup>7</sup>

When a tomb had not been sealed off, the stone slab was usually placed near the entrance, and adjacent to, the rock face of the mountain or cliff in which the tomb had been carved out. The stone was situated slightly uphill from the tomb entrance in a hollowed out groove, or “track,” that ran from the slab itself to the opening of the tomb. And, directly below the opening, an indentation was cut out so that when the stone was rolled along its track, it would drop into place directly in front of the entrance.

With the assistance of a lever and the force of gravity, a single person would have been able to set the stone into place. However, it would have required several people to move the stone once the entrance had been sealed off.

After Christ’s death, the Jewish religious leaders remembered His claims about being resurrected from the grave. They wanted to make absolutely sure that none of Christ’s disciples would sneak into the tomb and steal His body; so they went before the governor and asked him to place a Roman guard unit at the tomb’s entrance. An account of this incident is found in the twenty seventh chapter of Matthew, who wrote:

“Now on the next day, the day after the preparation, the chief priests and the Pharisees gathered together with Pilate, and said, ‘Sir, we remember that when he was still alive that deceiver said, ‘After three days I am to rise again; Therefore give orders for the grave to be made secure until the third day, otherwise His disciples may come and steal him away and say to the people, ‘He has risen from the dead,’ and the last deception will be worse than the first.’ “ (Matthew 27:62-64)

Both the Romans and the Jewish leaders had political reasons for making sure that the influence of Christ was finally put to an end because Jesus had attracted many followers who were becoming alienated against their religious and social structure. On many occasions, Jesus personally offended the Jewish religious leaders by

publicly exposing their true character and motives; so, as long as Jesus was alive, the Jewish power structure was threatened.

Roman oppression of the Jewish people had already been causing a great deal of unrest within the Jewish community. Because of this, the Roman governors and the Jewish leaders had enough trouble as it was, trying to suppress internal rebellions, without having further unrest caused by Jesus. They knew that the slightest rumor about Jesus Christ being raised from the dead would only create more unwanted problems; that is why the religious leaders went to Pilate requesting a guard for the grave.

When the Jewish leaders asked Pilate for a guard *unit*, the Governor replied; “You have a guard; go make it as secure as you know how.” Many people have incorrectly interpreted this verse to mean that Pilate refused to give them a Roman guard because they had their own temple guards. This is not true because other verses in the New Testament indicate that a Roman guard was definitely assigned to protect the tomb of Christ. When the Governor said, “You have a guard; go make it as secure as you know how . . .”; it was as if he said ‘Your request is granted, now take care of the matter.

Of course, even if the Jews had used their own temple guards, the tomb of Jesus would have still been well-protected because the temple guards were skilled soldiers and very well-disciplined. If a Jewish temple guard was found sleeping on duty, his clothes were set on fire; and if he lived through that ordeal he was also beaten.<sup>8</sup> However, as tough and as disciplined as the temple guard was, it still was not as efficient as a Roman guard.

According to ancient and modern historians, a Roman guard was composed of *at least* four Roman soldiers and many times it consisted of as many as *sixteen* soldiers.<sup>9</sup> The soldiers in a Roman guard unit were



the most highly trained dedicated and efficient fighters in the entire world. In fact, our modern military still employs certain principles of discipline and training which have been acquired from ancient Roman methods. A Roman Soldier received five years of intensive basic training before he was considered to be a fully qualified legionnaire.<sup>10</sup> Once trained, he sometimes carried as many as four weapons and proficiently used them to defend just eight square feet of ground from any and all “would be” attackers.<sup>11</sup> Roman legionnaires were sometimes outnumbered ten to one in battle, yet they would still emerge victorious because of their killing efficiency.<sup>12</sup> Jesus’ tomb would have been guarded by at least four of these Roman legionnaires, but, there were probably more than this number assigned because of the political circumstances. In any event, it can be stated with confidence that the tomb of Jesus was indeed made “secure.”

When the Jewish leaders and the Roman guard first arrived at the tomb, they inspected the grave and then placed a “seal” on the entrance. A Roman seal could only be placed in the presence of a Roman guard. (This is another reason for knowing that the soldiers at Christ’s tomb were Roman soldiers). To seal the tomb, a small string or thread would have been stretched between the edge of the stone and the edge of the opening. Two small lumps of clay would have been used to support the thread and the insignia of Caesar would have been imprinted upon the clay. The seal represented all the power and authority of the Roman government;<sup>13</sup> therefore, a soldier would defend the seal with his life and, if anyone tampered with the seal after it was affixed, the Roman government would not rest until that person was captured and put to death.<sup>14</sup>

After considering some of these facts, the “swoon theory” can now be evaluated and it’s correlation with history determined. If the swoon theory is correct, then after being beaten, crucified, punctured with a

spear, pronounced dead by four Roman executioners, and wrapped up in one hundred pounds of gummy spices and cloth bandages; Jesus was still not yet dead! And, when He was sealed up in a tomb, the cold dampness somehow revived Him instead of killing him. After He awoke, Jesus somehow managed to free Himself from the wrappings and spices in a totally dark atmosphere and then mustered up enough strength to move a 4000 pound stone from the tomb's entrance. He must have then managed to overpower or sneak by the Roman guard so that He could go to His disciples and proclaim to be the resurrected Lord of life.

Based upon the evidence of history, if the swoon theory is correct, then the tomb of Jesus must have still been the site of a great miracle on Easter morning. The skeptics often accuse Christians of having a "blind faith" yet it takes more faith to believe the swoon theory than most Christians ever dreamed of having.

### *The Great Grave Robbery*

The oldest argument against the resurrection of Jesus is found in the Bible itself. This argument was devised by the Jewish religious leaders of Christ's day and has been believed by many people all through history. The Gospel of Matthew contains the following account of how this argument originated:

"Now while they were on their way, behold, some of the guard came into the city and reported to the chief priests all that had happened. And when they had assembled with the elders and counseled together, they gave a large sum of money to the soldiers, and said 'You are to say; 'His disciples came by night and stole him away while we were asleep; And if this should come to the governor's ears, we will win him over and keep you out of trouble.' And they took the money and did as they had been instructed; And this story was widely spread among the Jews

and is to this day.” (Matthew 28:11-15)

The critics may not agree entirely with Matthew’s account but there are some important facts established with which most of them do agree. One important thing that is learned from this account is that it was truly a multiple man unit that was assigned to guard Christ’s tomb because Matthew states that; “Some of the guard came into the city.” It is also made obvious that this multiple man unit was a Roman guard.

The guard came to the Jewish religious leaders because they had some clout with the Roman Governor. The soldiers knew that failure to perform their designated duty would result in execution. That is probably why only “some of the guard” came into the city because the rest of the guard had probably feared for their lives. The Jews could possibly speak on their behalf to Pilate, the governor, and keep them from death. If the guard had not been Roman, why would the religious leaders have been quoted as saying, “and if this should come to the governor’s ears, we will win him over and keep you out of trouble.” Protecting the tomb of Christ had become a Roman matter.

The most important fact that is established in Matthew’s account is that the tomb of Jesus Christ was definitely *empty!* There would have been no need to fabricate any explanation whatsoever if the body of Jesus had not actually been absent from the tomb. The stolen body theory, the swoon theory, and others have all been devised to explain *why* the tomb of Jesus Christ was empty on Easter morning. It would be foolish for any skeptic to deny that Christ’s tomb was empty because to do so would require an absolute disregard for some of the most well-established facts of history.

The New Testament records some interesting details that were relevant to the empty tomb of Christ and the position of the stone that was used to seal the entrance is one of these details. The English versions of the Greek New Testament all indicate that the stone had been

moved away from the entrance after Christ's resurrection. However, the Greek language is much more explicit and expressive than the English language; so, scholars who have studied the Greek manuscripts have been able to learn something about the actual *location* of the stone after it had been moved away from the entrance. By examining each author's unique statement regarding the position of the stone; its location is determined to be uphill, and at a distance from, not only the entrance, but, from the *entire sepulcher*. In fact, John's description infers that the stone must have looked as though it had been picked up and carried away.<sup>15</sup>

Another interesting detail about the empty tomb of Christ is that it wasn't *completely* empty. Jesus' body was gone from the tomb but his grave clothes were still in the same place where He had been laid. The Apostle John notes that the linen cloth which had covered the head of Jesus had been rolled up and was lying separate from the rest of the grave clothes. Apparently John saw that the wrappings which had covered Christ's body were still *intact and undisturbed*. They must have resembled an empty cocoon because it was only until John saw the grave clothes that he finally believed that Jesus had been resurrected.

Christ's resurrected body had passed into a new dimension without ever disturbing the linen wrappings and spices which had covered His body. The piece which had covered His head had been removed to show the world that His body was no longer contained in the wrappings. In fact, the stone wasn't moved away from the entrance of the tomb to let Christ out of it, but rather to show the world that the tomb was no longer occupied. The grave clothes, the position of the stone, and the unoccupied tomb were all available for public inspection. If anybody doubted the rumor, all they would have had to do is take a stroll to the grave site and see for themselves if it was true or not.

The enemies of Jesus never denied the fact that the tomb was

empty. There has never been any ancient historical literature or archaeological discovery of any kind which refutes the empty tomb. The Jewish religious leaders persecuted, tortured and even killed people in order to stop the proclamation that Jesus was alive. If the tomb had not been empty, all they would have had to do is put the body of Christ on public display and the Christian movement would have been immediately destroyed!

The only recourse for the Jewish religious authority, other than proclaiming Jesus as Lord, was to say that the body had been stolen because the stolen body theory is really the only possible alternative to the Resurrection. However, most skeptics who claim that Christ's body was stolen have never honestly considered all of the circumstantial evidence and logical reasoning which contradict such an assumption. Consider the evidence:

When Jesus was arrested in the garden of Gethsemane, all of His disciples deserted Him. Peter, who had been His most outspoken follower, publicly denied Jesus because he feared for his own life. In one instance, Peter even denied knowing Jesus upon being questioned by a woman.

After Jesus was crucified, His disciples became depressed, disillusioned and afraid. Therefore, it is not very reasonable to assume that this same fearful group of men would have plotted to steal the body of Jesus. If such a plan had even been proposed, how possible would it have been to convince all eleven disciples to become a part of the scheme? The plot would have been a violation of the very moral and ethical principles for which Christ had stood.

Let us suppose though, for the sake of argument, that all eleven disciples had indeed experienced a sudden change of character and decided to go along with the deception. If so, when they arrived at the tomb, they would have discovered the Roman guard unit which had been

assigned to protect it. It would have been an extraordinary coincidence for the disciples to have found the guard asleep on duty because the Roman penalty for such an offense was death!<sup>16</sup> The multiple man guard unit slept in alternating shifts so that at least one person would always be rested and alert. And, if a soldier deserted his post, the death penalty was also invoked.<sup>17</sup> The soldiers had several motivating factors which caused them to perform their duties correctly; the greatest of these factors would have been the motivation to stay alive.

Let us now suppose though, for the sake of argument, that all of the soldiers were indeed asleep at the precise time of the disciples' arrival at the tomb. Even sleeping legionnaires would have struck terror within the heart of any average person, especially if that person was plotting to steal something that the soldiers were protecting. However, in spite of the circumstances, the disciples must have mustered up enough courage and stealth to sneak past the guard without awakening them. When they approached the entrance, they would have detected the Roman seal which had been placed on the doorway. And, even though they realized that breaking the seal was punishable by death, they still remained true to their cause and commenced moving the stone away from the entrance.

A four thousand pound stone would have caused a slight earth tremor, but, in spite of this, the guard still slept. Now, at this point of their operation the disciples must have all experienced temporary insanity because instead of moving the stone just far enough to make entrance into the tomb, they rolled the stone uphill and completely away from the entire sepulcher. Fortunately, the guard still remained asleep long enough for the disciples to somehow remove Christ's body *without disturbing the wrappings which encased it*.

After the disciples hid the body of Christ, instead of keeping their secret to themselves, they decided to persuade some other people to join

in their deception. Not only did they convince other close friends of Christ to say that Jesus was still alive, they somehow managed to persuade more than five hundred people to make the same remarkable claim because Jesus “allegedly” appeared to more than five hundred witnesses after His resurrection. In fact, the Apostle Paul wrote a letter to the Corinthians in which he stated that most of these witnesses who actually saw Jesus were still alive! (This was an open invitation for anyone to investigate the matter for themselves.) Moreover, every single person who had been approached with the opportunity to become a part of this great deception must have eagerly complied because nobody in history ever divulged the conspiracy to anyone. Now wouldn't it seem logical that at least some of the more than five hundred “witnesses” would have gladly revealed the secret conspiracy to Christ's enemies?

Nevertheless, after this perfect conspiracy was organized, the disciples marched right back into the streets of Jerusalem to proclaim the resurrection of Jesus instead of going to some far-off place where such a legend would have been much easier to propagate. Apparently, insanity must have gripped the minds of these conspirators. After making their proclamations, the eleven disciples were continuously persecuted throughout their lives for their eyewitness testimony about Jesus Christ and His resurrection. They were beaten, tortured and imprisoned on many occasions because they refused to renounce their claims. Their persistent dedication to Jesus Christ finally resulted in the torturous execution of all but one of them. And the one who was not executed had to be exiled to a small Island because of his refusal to deny Jesus.

If the disciples of Jesus had stolen His body, wouldn't it be reasonable to assume that at least *one* of them would have renounced his faith in order to escape execution? However, such is not the case because each disciple glorified Jesus until his final breath.

Of course, some skeptics have tried to downplay the execution of Christ's disciples by reminding people that the world has had many martyrs who died for false causes. However, what they fail to point out is that a martyr only dies for a cause *that he or she sincerely believes to be true*. The disciples of Jesus were martyred because *they believed He had been raised from the dead*. Their belief was based on the fact that Jesus actually appeared to them after He had been crucified. He ate with them; He drank with them; He let them examine the marks from His wounds; and, He remained on earth for forty days after His resurrection. If Jesus was not resurrected, then there is really no explanation for the harmonious and unwavering testimonies that were proclaimed by each disciple until his death.

### *A Wrong Number*

A careful study of the theories that people have devised in order to explain away the resurrection of Christ will only demonstrate their willful ignorance of the truth. Some "scholars" have even tried to say that the women who went to visit the body of Jesus must have gone to the wrong tomb. This, they say, is the reason why the tomb was empty. If this was true, then the disciples must have also gone to the wrong tomb; the religious leaders must have gone to the wrong tomb; and Joseph of Arimethea must have forgotten which tomb he owned. The many other problems that this theory encounters are obvious and are not even worth mentioning.

### *A Helpful Enemy*

The resurrection of Jesus Christ is the most well-established fact of ancient history. This is because much of the evidence in favor of



it was provided by Christ's very enemies. His enemies attested to His death; His enemies placed a guard at the tomb to prevent any foul play; and it was Christ's enemies who provided absolute assurance that the tomb was empty on Easter morning. When Jesus conquered death He provided the ultimate proof that He was and still is who He claimed to be—the Eternal Lord of Life and Savior of mankind.

*The Truth:*

*“Jesus said to her, “I am the resurrection and the life; he who believes in Me will live even if he dies, and everyone who lives and believes in Me will never die... (John 11 :25,26)*

*“For You will not abandon my soul to Sheol; Nor will You allow Your Holy One to undergo decay.” (Psalm 16:10 a Messianic prophecy written 1000 years before Christ)*

*“And behold, a severe earthquake had occurred, for an angel of the Lord descended from heaven and came and rolled away the stone and sat upon it. And his appearance was like lightning, and his clothing as white as snow. The guards shook for fear of him and became like dead men. The angel said to the women, “ Do not be afraid; for I know that you are looking for Jesus who has been crucified. “He is not here, for He has risen, just as He said. Come, see the place where He was lying. Go quickly and tell His disciples that He has risen from the dead; and behold, He is going ahead of you into Galilee, there you will see Him; behold, I have told you.” And they left the tomb quickly with fear and great joy and ran to report it to His disciples.” (Matthew28:3-8)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## IV

## NEVER TO RETURN?

*The lie: Jesus is gone forever.*

For almost two thousand years, Christians have had an eager anticipation of an event known as “the second advent of Christ.” This hope is based on the fact that after His resurrection and just before Jesus ascended into Heaven; He promised His followers that He would someday return to establish His own Kingdom on earth in Jerusalem. Christians have believed that Jesus would return to abolish evil and to establish justice; that He would rule over a new world where the lion would “lay down with the lamb” and where swords would be “beaten into plow shares;” a place where there would be no more war because the entire earth would be “filled with the knowledge of God as the waters cover the seas.” The promise of this glorious kingdom had been previously made to the Jews by several of their ancient prophets, some of whom predicted that this kingdom was to be established by their long awaited Messiah, who would deliver Israel from her enemies and fulfill the many wonderful promises made to their forefathers.

Christians have also believed that the day would come when the earth itself would be totally renewed. In this new world there will be no more pain or sorrow; death and evil will be forever annihilated; and those who trust in Him will enter into an everlasting relationship with God that will bring forth ever-increasing joy and fulfillment throughout all eternity.

It is no wonder that Christians have looked forward to the coming of their Lord, especially since evil and corruption is rampantly pervading

this present world. Jesus instructed His followers to do whatever is possible to alleviate the suffering and sorrows of this world; but, He made it absolutely clear that the only *permanent* solution for the problems of mankind would never be realized until He returned to establish His own kingdom. In other words, the only true and lasting world peace will be established by the Prince of Peace Himself, Jesus of Nazareth.

In speaking of His return, Jesus stated that no person would ever know the exact day or hour of its occurrence; however, He did indicate that the *general time* of His second coming could be known by those who remained attentive to certain prophetic signs. Jesus spoke of several of these signs as *general* indications that would precede His second coming. However, He and the ancient prophets also made numerous detailed predictions about *specific events* that would occur before the Messiah would establish His kingdom.

History has been witnessing the miraculous fulfillment of many of these specific predictions which were written hundreds and even thousands of years before they actually came to pass. There has especially been a rapid acceleration of these “end times” prophecies coming true in just this past century.

Because of misguided zeal, many sincere Christians have overreacted to the fulfillment of prophecy concerning the second coming of Christ. In the past, certain groups of Christians have fled to the mountains because of their certainty that Christ’s return was imminent. Others have marched through the streets proclaiming that He would come within a matter of days. However, such reactions have usually stemmed from ignorance about prophecy and have served to create greater doubts among skeptics about Christ’s return than they ever had before.

The early church had an obvious anticipation of Christ’s return

which prompted them to zealously proclaim the Gospel and to always maintain a state of readiness to meet Him. Such an attitude should be maintained by every Christian because certain prophecies do seem to indicate that Jesus could call His followers, as a group, out of this world at any time of His choosing - *even before every specific prophecy is fulfilled*. This attitude of preparedness is especially wise because life is fragile and the possibility of death is ever-present and will eventually come upon most people *at an hour that they do not expect*.

The early Christians expected Jesus to return very soon, but they never pinpointed or focused upon an exact time of arrival. In fact, the Apostle Peter wrote; “But do not let this one fact escape your notice beloved, that with the Lord one day is as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day. The Lord is not slow about His promise, as some count slowness, but is patient toward you, not wishing for any to perish but for all to come to repentance.” (II Peter 3:8, 9).

In the past, Many Christians have made the mistake of assuming that the fulfillment of certain prophecies meant that the end of the world was immediately at hand. They failed to see that the Bible contained other specific predictions which *also had to occur* before Christ’s return to this earth to set up His kingdom.

Jesus said that no one would ever know the exact time of His return; however He did indicate that there would be a particular “generation” in history which *would* be able to know the *general* time of His coming. Jesus said that this particular generation would “not pass away” until all things were fulfilled. This prediction seems to indicate that there would be a certain generation in history that would witness an accelerated fulfillment of Bible prophecy just prior to Christ’s return to this earth.

First, there was one very important prophetic event which had to occur before any generation would be able to recognize this general time

of Christ's return. Many Christians in the past have ignored the prophecies about this one event because it was inconceivable that such an event could ever literally occur. They tried to "spiritualize" or "symbolize" the prophecies about, or related to, this event rather than accept their literal meanings.

During World War I, many Christians proclaimed that the end of the world was at hand yet this key prophecy had not been fulfilled. World War II came and the alarm was once again sounded by certain Christians yet this key prophecy had still not come true. Christians are sounding the alarm once again; only this time, that inconceivable prophecy has *been fulfilled!* It concerns the small nation of Israel and its fulfillment is truly miraculous.

### *An Indestructible Nation*

Before considering this remarkable prophecy, it is important to know certain details of Jewish history. The Jews have been the most persecuted race of people in all of history. It is true that other races have suffered terrible and cruel treatment at different periods in time, but, no other race has had to endure the long, relentless history of persecution that the Jews have had to endure.

Almost four thousand years ago the Jews were forced to become slaves in Egypt. This period of painful bondage lasted for about four hundred years. The famous story of their "Exodus" from Egypt has been passed down and celebrated from one generation to the next throughout Jewish history. More than 2700 years ago, the ten northern tribes of Israel were conquered by Assyria and many were drug off into exile. At two later periods in history even Jerusalem was violently taken away from them and their sacred temple was destroyed as well. The first destruction occurred around 600 B.C. when Israel was conquered by

Babylon. At this time, the Israelites were led away into captivity at Babylon in several phases between 600-580 B. C.

It is interesting to note that this event was predicted to occur by several ancient Hebrew prophets, long before it actually happened. Moses was one of those who foretold of this event, as did Isaiah and Jeremiah. For example, the book of Isaiah states: “Behold, the days are coming when all that is in your house, and all that your fathers have laid up in store to this day shall be carried to Babylon; nothing shall be left, says the Lord. And some of your sons who shall issue from you, whom you shall beget, shall be taken away; and they shall become officials in the palace of the king of Babylon.” (Isaiah 39:6, 7). This prophecy was made about one hundred fifty years before the Babylonian conquest of Israel actually occurred. Isaiah goes on in chapter forty five to mention the exact name of the Persian king who would finally release Israel from captivity.

Jeremiah also foretold of the conquest of Israel by Babylon several years before it happened and he even stated the exact number of years which they would remain in servitude. (Jeremiah 25:11). Furthermore the prophecies of Moses even antedate those of Isaiah and Jeremiah by many hundred years. God predicted such events through His prophets, not because He was going to deliberately cause them to happen, but, because out of His foreknowledge, He knew what actions and events were going to take place in the future. Many predictions could have been annulled if only the people would have heeded God’s prophetic warnings.

After being allowed to return from Babylon to rebuild their temple, a few centuries later, the Jewish people were once again subjugated and humiliated by a Greek tyrant named Antiochus Epiphanies who ruled the

Seleucid Empire after the division of Alexander the Great's kingdom. This mad man outlawed every form and vestige of Judaism and he even defiled the Jewish temple by slaughtering a pig on the altar. The eventual Jewish revolt and restoration of the temple is still celebrated today by Jewish families in their feast of "Chanukah."

In 70 A.D., Titus of Rome conquered the Jews once more and they were again extracted from their homeland. As a result of this conquest, the Jews were scattered around the world for almost two thousand years without a country of their own. This conquest and dispersion was likewise predicted by several Hebrew prophets long before it actually took place.

Moses foretold of this Jewish dispersion more than fifteen hundred years before it occurred. He said: "*Moreover, the Lord will scatter you among all peoples from one end of the earth to the other end of the earth;... And among those nations you shall find no rest and there shall be no resting place for the sole of your foot... And the Lord will bring you back to Egypt in ships by the way about which I spoke to you, "You will never see it again!" And there you shall offer yourselves for sale to your enemies as male and female slaves, but there will be no buyer.*" (Deuteronomy 28:64-68).

Not only were the Jews scattered around the world after the conquest in 70 A.D., they were also sent to the slave markets in Egypt where their supply soon exceeded the demand for them as slaves. This prophecy represents an example of a conditional warning which didn't have to occur if the people of Israel had only remained true to the Lord.

The prophet Ezekiel also wrote: "However, I shall leave a remnant, for you will have those who escaped the sword among the nations *when you are scattered among the countries*. Then those of you

who escape will remember among the nations to which they will be carried captive, how I have been hurt by their adulterous hearts which turned away from me..." (Ezekiel 6:8-9).

Ezekiel's prophecy was made more than six hundred years before the dispersion of Israel. Likewise the prophets Jeremiah, Isaiah and Amos also foretold of this terrible outcome of Israel and even Jesus Himself later said; "... for there will be a great distress upon the land and wrath to this people, and they will fall by the edge of the sword, and will be led captive into all the nations; And Jerusalem will be trampled underfoot by the Gentiles..." (Luke 21:23,24).

Not only did Jesus foretell of Israel's demise, He also stated in another passage that the temple would be utterly destroyed to the extent that not one stone would remain upon another. He even indicated that this great judgment would occur before His own generation passed away. According to the records of history, not only was Israel conquered within forty years from Christ's prediction, the Jewish temple was completely leveled to the ground by the Romans. Therefore, the longest period of suffering and persecution of the Jewish race began with the generation which rejected their true Messiah, Jesus Christ of Nazareth.

During their worldwide dispersion, many nations accepted the Jews and then later rejected and severely persecuted them. Hundreds of thousands were killed, imprisoned or forced to renounce their faith from the time of Emperor Constantine, through the Dark Ages and Spanish Inquisition. They were eventually expelled from Spain in 1492 (unless of course they would "convert" to "Christianity;" renounce everything that was considered "Jewish" and agree to become second class citizens). If not, they had to leave or be slaughtered. The Jews have been blamed for every ill imaginable throughout history – even the Bubonic



Plague! One of the most heinous and well known crimes in history involved the extermination of more than six million Jews by Adolf Hitler. However, in spite of being scattered, and in spite of enduring relentless persecution, the indestructible Jew has somehow managed to remain a pure and distinct race against all odds. This is because they are still a very special and “chosen” people in God’s eyes. He calls them: “the apple (pupil) of His eye.”

The Jews have always been God’s special people throughout their history because God chose to bless the world through the nation of Israel. However, in doing so, Israel was placed in a position of great responsibility, a position that no other nation had been given. So, as long as the Jews remained faithful to God, He promised to bless them more abundantly than any other nation on earth. And, indeed, the Jews have enjoyed several great periods of prosperity, wealth, and happiness as a nation because they maintained their fellowship with God. During these periods of prosperity, no enemy could conquer them because the Lord was their protector. Their nation was often protected from sickness, disease, famine and other plagues that were prevalent in neighboring countries. Their herds of animals increased and their crops never failed while the Jews were in harmony with God and obedient to His laws.

However, whenever the Israelites turned their hearts and minds away from God, they *willingly* excluded themselves from his Divine protection. God would patiently advise them of their dire situation by sending instructive warnings and pleas through His prophets. If the people refused to listen to God’s many prophetic warnings, then judgment would eventually fall upon Israel.

The Jews often received a greater punishment for their wrongs than other nations received for committing the same offenses because the Jews had been given a greater revelation of God and therefore had known better than to forsake His instructions. Because of their position of responsibility, they were held more accountable for their actions than the people of other nations.

Israel's position of responsibility can be a little better understood when compared to modern situations involving child development. For example: If a twelve year old child deliberately spills ink on a new carpet, that child will usually be held more accountable than a two year old child who does the same thing. This is because a twelve year old generally has a greater awareness of wrong than a two year old possesses. Parents give their children certain rules and instructions to follow because they love their children and know what is best for them. As a child matures, they should begin to understand the reason for the rules and the love that rests behind them. God gave Israel certain rules to follow because He created people and knew what was best for them. His laws were based in love and were intended to ultimately lead His people into the most abundant and rewarding life possible.

Judgment often came upon Israel because the Jews had to reach a state of despair before they would repent and seek God's help and fellowship once more. When the Jews were heading down a path which led to spiritual destruction, it sometimes required physical destruction to awaken them and cause them to seek the path of eternal spiritual life.

God always had the future best interests of Israel in mind whenever He dealt with them. Whether Israel was being punished or whether Israel was being blessed, the Jews always remained God's chosen people because of His promises to their forefathers. No matter

what Israel's spiritual condition happened to be, God promised to "bless" any nation who treated the Jews fairly and to "curse" any nation who mistreated them. The record of history proves the validity of this promise. The empires of Babylon, Egypt, Persia, Assyria, Rome, Spain, Napoleon's France, Hitler's Germany, and Great Britain, all began to decline shortly after they developed unfavorable attitudes toward the Jews.

### *Home at Last*

The prophets not only predicted the Babylonian conquest of Israel and the great worldwide dispersion, they also predicted an event which would occur during the general time of, but prior to, the coming of the Messiah to establish His kingdom. This was a key prophecy which had to be fulfilled before the Savior's return to this earth. According to the prophets, the Jews had to be restored to their ancient homeland and be established once more as a nation before God would finally bring an end to human history as we now know it.

For many centuries, certain Christian scholars have realized that Israel would once more have to become a nation in their original homeland before Jesus would come back to this earth. However, this opinion was not very popular in the past because most people considered such an event to be impossible. Even though the prophets had accurately predicted the previous conquests and worldwide dispersion of Israel, Christians attempted to "spiritualize" the prophecies which placed the Jews back in their homeland before Christ's return, rather than believe in their literal fulfillment. They refused to listen to prophets like Ezekiel who, twenty six hundred years ago, wrote: "For I will take you from the nations, gather you from all the lands, *and bring you into your own*

*land.*” (Ezekiel 36:24). This prediction was made right after the Jews had been told they would be scattered around the world. (Ezekiel 36:19).

In chapter thirty eight of the book of Ezekiel, God addresses an enemy to the north of Israel and says: “After many days you will be summoned; *in the latter years* you will come into the land that is restored from the sword, whose inhabitants have been *gathered from many nations* to the mountains of Israel which had been a continual waste: but *its people were brought out of the nations...*” (Ezekiel 38:8).

The Old Testament prophets predicted the restoration of Israel and Jesus Himself indicated that the Jews would be in their homeland before His return. That is why, for many centuries, dedicated Bible scholars also predicted that this restoration would take place, even though they were laughed at by their contemporaries. For example, in 1866 a Bible scholar by the name of James Grant wrote: “The personal coming of Christ, to establish His millennial reign on earth, will not take place until the Jews are restored to their own land . . . now the return of the Jews to the Holy Land, and the mustering and marshalling of these mighty armies, with a view to capturing Jerusalem, must require a considerable time yet.”<sup>1</sup> Other scholars voiced this same opinion even centuries earlier than James Grant did.

It once seemed impossible that a tiny nation like Israel, after being persecuted and scattered abroad for almost two thousand years, would ever be restored as a nation in the exact geographical location that was inhabited by their forefathers some four thousand years ago. However, against all odds, in 1948, the impossible became a reality when Israel

---

<sup>1</sup> Grant, James; As quoted by Hal Lindsey. The Late Great Planet Earth (Zondervan Publishing House, Grand Rapids, Mich. 64th printing 1978) P. 39

was reborn as a nation in what was then called Palestine. This miraculous event marked the generation which would witness the return of Jesus Christ to this earth!

### *The Truth Hurts*

Before considering some of the other significant prophecies which are being fulfilled in this generation, it is important first to have a *general* understanding of what the Bible says will occur on earth prior to Christ's return. However, discussions about the "end of the world" often frighten people and cause them to avoid any encounter at all with the subject. Such an attitude is foolish because if, after a careful study of the matter, the Christian view is determined to be untenable, then all fear and apprehension about the topic can be once and for all dispelled. However, if the Christian concept seems valid, what possible harm could come from learning the truth? Hiding from the truth will not cause the truth to go away. It is better to know the truth, even if it is sometimes painful, than to avoid it until it is too late to profit from it.

Suppose there was a man who had a house situated alongside a river in a deep valley. Now, what if a concerned local resident knocked on this man's door to tell him that the dam upstream was starting to crack and would probably collapse within hours? Would it be wise for the owner of this house to cover his ears and ignore the information because he values his home so much, or should he at least go look at the dam himself? Should he accuse this loving neighbor of using "scare tactics" just to get him to leave his happy home or should he thank him for his concern?

The Bible contains some frightening information about the "end times" but it also contains an *escape plan* for anyone who is willing to

listen. The escape plan is unbelievably simple and it has been offered by God as a *free* gift. It is impossible for human beings to earn this gift through their own merits because it has already been paid for in full by Jesus Christ. More will be said about this free gift in the following chapters. But, in the meantime, there is absolutely no reason why *anyone* should have to fear the end of this world.

### *The Human Solution*

According to the Bible, before Jesus returns, world turmoil and chaos will increase to such a degree that the very existence of mankind will become threatened. Because of this, people will desperately be searching for some way to solve the world's problems and to establish peace between nations. Unfortunately, the majority of the population will be seeking humanistic solutions for problems which only God will be able to solve.

Because of these threatening world conditions, most of mankind will enthusiastically receive any man or system which is capable of bringing the world together in a unified effort for peace and survival. This attitude will open the door for the creation of a one-world government and an ecumenical pseudo religious system that will ultimately be ruled by one man.

This great world leader will be a charismatic individual who has a supernatural charm and power which mesmerizes the populace. He will appear to be the incarnation of peace, strength and wisdom but in reality he will be a malignant deceiver. The Bible refers to this man and this one-world system as "the Antichrist." And according to the Bible, the Antichrist will be energized and indwelt by Satan himself and will be capable of performing "miracles."

Antichrist will come into power at a time which will ultimately become the most horrible period of suffering and tragedy in human history. This period is known to Christians as “the great tribulation” and many believe that it will occur during a literal seven year period immediately prior to the second coming of Christ. During the first three and one-half years of this seven year tribulation, the Antichrist will seem to be the answer to world peace. A pseudo-peace will be established among nations but when the world finally cries out “peace and safety” at last, then destruction will come upon them suddenly like birth pangs upon a woman with child...” (I Thessalonians 5:3).

During the last three and one-half years of the tribulation, this charismatic world leader will become the most malicious dictator that the world has ever seen. He will demand to be worshiped as god himself and he will execute anybody who refuses to do so. People will be required to receive an identifying mark in order to buy or sell anything. Those who receive such a mark will be *eternally* rejecting the only true God by swearing their allegiance to the Antichrist.

Throughout this last half of the tribulation, destructive forces will be allowed to run rampant. Billions of people will die from war, famine, disease, execution and a host of other terrible plagues. The entire world will ultimately be at war again until the last great battle on earth called “The Battle of Armageddon” is halted by the personal return of Jesus Christ to this earth. Jesus will prevent the total annihilation of mankind and He will reconstruct a devastated earth and establish His own kingdom of peace.

*Fear Not*

In spite of the horrors of the tribulation, Christians need not fear. There is some difference of opinion among Bible students concerning the *exact* fate of Christians during this terrible time, but, in each case there is absolutely no provision for Christian fear. Some students believe that Christians will be mysteriously taken out of this world (or “raptured”) *before* the seven year tribulation begins. When this “Rapture” occurs, believers who are presently alive and those who have died, will be instantly “caught up to meet the Lord in the air” (I Thessalonians 4:17) and be changed from mortal to immortal; possessing new imperishable bodies. (I Corinthians 15:51-53).

According to this viewpoint, during the tribulation, multitudes of the people who were not ‘raptured’ will finally become Christians, but, these people will have to be carried *through* the remainder of the tribulation by the supernatural power of God. God will provide physical sustenance for these believers and He will also give them an inner strength which defies fear even if they eventually face execution.

Some students believe that Christians will be “raptured” at the mid-point of the tribulation while others maintain that all Christians will have to go through the *entire* tribulation before they are “raptured.” In either case, Christians will still be miraculously preserved and sustained by the power of God just as the Israelites were preserved when the awful plagues fell upon Egypt. Those who are ultimately required to face execution will do so *fearlessly* by the power of the Holy Spirit.

The early Christians were persecuted, tortured, and killed, yet they were so filled with God’s Spirit that many remained totally unafraid. Christian death was often a spectacle (and frustration) for non-believers who couldn’t understand such serenity in the face of pain and death. Many of the early martyrs sang hymns while they were being consumed



by fire at the stake. Others praised God as they were being torn to pieces by lions. The Christian triumph over death is a matter of many historical records.

It is wonderful to know that God supernaturally strengthens those who are persecuted because of their faith in Jesus. It is also comforting to believe that Christians may not have to go through the tribulation at all. However, the purpose of this chapter will not be to expound upon which “tribulation-rapture” theory is more preferable. There are certain aspects of Scripture which are not as obvious as the *basic* essential doctrines of the Christian faith. Some of these less obvious facts of Scripture are only revealed to an individual after intensive research and study. Christians may differ on some of the obscure details of Christianity because the Bible says that until Jesus comes, we will see certain things as “in a mirror dimly” and will only know things “in part” until that time (I Corinthians 13:12). It is possible for one Christian to have a greater revelation in certain areas of Scripture than another Christian. This does not mean that one is spiritually superior to another nor does it mean that both do not share the same *basic fundamental beliefs* of the Christian faith.

Students of prophecy have some differing views about certain details of the “last days;” however, most of these students are finally in agreement that Jesus is coming very soon. The ancient prophecies about the “last days” are rapidly falling into place. It would require an entire book to effectively illustrate the many significant prophecies which are being fulfilled in this generation; therefore, only a very small portion of them will be briefly considered in the remainder of this chapter.

### *Birth Pangs*

Some of the most important prophecies concerning the “end times” were revealed by Jesus Himself. Jesus made many detailed and explicit predictions, but, He also spoke of some *general* “signs” or, better yet, “symptoms” which the world would experience before His return. These “symptoms” have been occurring to some degree all through history and because of this, many skeptics of Christianity have contended that Christ’s predictions are irrelevant. Jesus said that there would be “wars and rumors of wars;” “nations would rise against other nations’ and ‘kingdoms against other kingdoms.” He also said that famines and earthquakes would occur in various places.

Some Christians have made the mistake of announcing the “end of the world” solely because these general symptoms could be observed all around them. This problem has arisen only because people have either misinterpreted or ignored what Jesus actually said. Consider His words in the Gospel of Matthew: “And you will be hearing of wars and rumors of wars; see that you are not frightened, for these things must take place, *but that is not yet the end*. For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom, and in various places there will be famines and earthquakes. But all these things *are merely the beginning of birth pangs.*” (Matthew 24:6-8). Jesus didn’t say that wars and rumors of wars would mark the end of history. He said that wars, famines and earthquakes would be like “birth pangs.” When a woman is in labor, her pains become more frequent and intense as child birth draws near. What Jesus was saying, in effect, was that wars, famines and earthquakes would likewise increase in frequency and magnitude as we approach the time of His return.

Some people have mistakenly assumed that Jesus promised to return within His own generation because in the thirty fourth verse of Matthew, chapter 24, Jesus said: “This generation will not pass away until all these things take place.” However, in its correct context, Jesus was referring to the generation which, not only witnessed the intensification of the *general* “signs,” but also witnessed certain *specific* events that would likewise occur during the same general time or “season.” Therefore, Jesus was speaking of a specific generation, but, not necessarily His own.

The general signs or symptoms which Christ spoke of have become extremely significant in our current generation. For example, more human beings have lost their lives in wars during this past century than in all the other centuries of recorded history combined! Unfortunately people in the twentieth century have witnessed the entire world at war for the first time in history and conflicts between nations continue to grow as never before; yet, modern technology continues to produce weapons which are capable of yielding unlimited destruction.

Not only has war intensified, famines have also taken an unprecedented toll of human life during this past century. We are currently entering what scientists have predicted to be “an age of famines.” Already, the annual death toll from famine is starting to spiral and, unless the course is somehow changed, much of the whole world will soon be threatened by starvation.

In addition to wars and famines, Jesus also indicated that earthquakes would increase in frequency and magnitude. It is interesting that Jesus would include a physical “symptom” of the earth itself, as one of the general signs that would precede His second coming because major earthquakes have been

occurring all through history, but, there has been a scientifically measured increase in the frequency of these seismic catastrophes during the past few decades.

Seismological monitoring equipment has enabled scientists to accurately record seismic disturbances throughout the world and, in each consecutive decade since 1950; the frequency of earthquakes has approximately doubled.<sup>1</sup> According to statistics, the 1970's had far more devastating earthquakes than any previous decade in history. And if this trend continues, earthquakes in the 1980's will intensify even further, prior to reaching its close.

Earthquakes are now occurring in geographical locations which have never before experienced such phenomenon. Even volcanic activity has been increasing during the past decades. If, indeed this is the general time of Christ's return, the world can expect to experience an even greater barrage of earthquakes in the years ahead.

At this point, it is important to reiterate that an increase in the frequency and magnitude of these, and a few other *general* signs which Christ spoke of, does not necessarily mean that the end of the world is at hand, Jesus said these things must take place, "but that is not yet the end." (Matthew 24:6). As previously mentioned, it was necessary for certain *specific* events to also take place before His coming. Many of these events are rapidly being fulfilled in "this generation" and some of them are directly related to the restored nation of Israel.

### *Middle East Tension*

According to ancient prophets, not only would the Jews be re-established as a nation in Israel, they would also have to regain

possession and control of the ancient city of Jerusalem. In the twelfth chapter of the book of Zechariah, the Jews are portrayed as being in control of Jerusalem when the Messiah returns to conquer the enemies of Israel. For example, verse six of this chapter says: “In that day I will make the clans of Judah like a firepot among pieces of wood and a flaming torch among sheaves, so they will consume on the right hand and on the left all the surrounding peoples, *while the inhabitants of Jerusalem again dwell on their own sites in Jerusalem.*”

Up until 1967, very few people thought it possible for the Jews to ever regain possession of their ancient city. When Israel was conquered by Babylon in about 600 B.C., the Jewish sovereign control of Jerusalem was lost and never totally regained before their worldwide dispersion. Even during the time of Christ, it was the Romans who controlled Jerusalem and not the Jews. However, in June of 1967, the Jews finally recaptured the ancient city of Jerusalem in just six days! Now, for the first time in twenty six hundred years, the Jews once again have sovereign control over their holy city.

Because of recent developments in the Middle East, we are now witnessing the fulfillment of several other remarkable prophecies that were once considered to be ridiculous by many skeptics. According to Scripture, a conflict between the Arabs and the Jews will cause a “spark” which ignites the fuse of the final world war. The Jewish possession of Jerusalem will be a major factor behind this conflict that eventually brings all nations into the Middle East for the last great battle on earth called “Armageddon.” The book of Zechariah says; “Behold I am going to make Jerusalem a cup that causes reeling to all the peoples around... And it will come about in that day that I will make Jerusalem *a heavy stone for all peoples . . .*” (Zechariah 12:2,3).

Not too many years ago, the idea of world war being triggered by a conflict between the Arabs and the Jews seemed almost laughable. That's because, until recently, the nations of the Middle East were existing in a rather archaic cultural and technological environment. The western nations were far more technologically advanced and they had a seemingly infinite military superiority over the Arab world. Therefore, any skirmish which might have developed within the backward countries of the Middle East certainly wouldn't have threatened world security.

However, in recent years the picture has drastically changed. The world has now become economically dependent upon the precious natural resource of oil. The Arab nations have become major world suppliers of this precious commodity and have therefore entered into a position of world power. Furthermore, all the nations of the world would like to have access to Arab oil but there is now a problem with which all interested nations must contend. That problem is the nation of Israel!

It is no secret that the Arab countries are incensed by Israel's national restoration in Palestine. They are especially infuriated by Israel's occupation and control of Old Jerusalem. The ancient city had been a sacred possession of the Muslim world for many years because located within the city is the second holiest shrine of all of Islam (Muslim religion). This sacred shrine is called the "Dome of the Rock" and it is located upon Mount Moriah which is where the ancient Jewish temple once stood.

Certain Jewish leaders have expressed a desire to rebuild the ancient temple of Solomon but this poses an additional threat to the Arab world. Because, according to Jewish law and tradition, the only place the temple can be located is upon Mount Moriah! All through history,

the Arab nations have been fighting against each other. However, now for the first time, they are starting to unite with one common cause. This common cause is to destroy the nation of Israel and reclaim Jerusalem. Because of this fact, it is evident that Jerusalem has now become “a cup that causes reeling to all the peoples” and a “heavy stone” which is burdening the whole world.

The Arab nations are continuously placing economic pressures upon major world powers in order to turn them against Israel. The great Arab oil weapon has already caused many “would be” allies of Israel to shift their support away from the Jews. Even the United States has been experiencing an anti-Israeli movement that has gained considerable political strength. However, if the United States ever makes the immoral decision to desert Israel in the face of danger, America will undoubtedly suffer a similar, and probably a more severe fate than those other great powers in history that did likewise.

Even if her allies desert her, the tiny nation of Israel is willing to take on the entire world before the Jews will ever give up their homeland again. When Titus of Rome conquered the Jews in 70 A.D., almost one thousand Jewish patriots defended the last Jewish stronghold which was known as “Masada.” When defeat appeared to be imminent, these Jewish patriots chose to commit suicide rather than surrender. Many world spectators have looked upon Israel as having “the spirit of Masada” in their current situation because many Israeli’s would rather die than surrender their country. Jewish military authorities agree that this spirit of “death before surrender” exists, but, they have publicly claimed it would be more appropriate to say that Israel has the spirit of “Samson” rather than “Masada.” (In the Old Testament, when Samson died, he took his enemies down with him).

If the destruction of Israel becomes imminent, the Jews will undoubtedly destroy as many of their enemies as possible. The Israeli's have nuclear weapons and they are prepared to use them against any nation of the world if it becomes necessary. This sobering fact serves to create an even greater tension in the Middle East.

### *Russia*

The Bible contains many detailed prophecies about other individual nations and their roles in the great climax of history. The great alliances of power that are currently developing among the nations of the world were predicted to emerge in the "last days" by the prophets of Israel. In the Old Testament, these nations were often identified by their ancient tribal names, but, historians have been able to trace the individual histories of these tribes and determine which modern countries are represented by their descendants.

For example, the prophets Ezekiel, Daniel and Joel predicted the emergence of a great northern military power which would attack the restored nation of Israel. The book of Ezekiel contains a great amount of information about this battle and the exact identity of this great army in the second and third verses of Ezekiel, chapter thirty eight. These verses say; "Son of man, set your face toward Gog of the land of *Magog* the prince of *Rosh, Meshach* and *Tubal* and prophesy against him, and say, 'Thus says the Lord God, Behold I am against you, O Gog, prince of *Rosh, Meshach, and Tubal.*'" In these verses, it is learned that the northern army would be descendants of the ancient tribes of Magog, Rosh, Meshach and Tubal.

For many centuries, scholars have been able to trace the migrations of these tribes and have identified them as the people who principally



inhabit modern Russia. Ancient historians such as Herodotus, Josephus, Pliny, and others have provided valuable information about the histories of these people and, in his book, “The Late Great Planet Earth,” Hal Lindsey conclusively demonstrates the relationship between these ancient tribes and modern Russia by providing documentation from both ancient and modern historians.

Long ago the prophets predicted the rise of this great military power. Daniel called this power “the kings of the north,” Joel called it a “northern army” and Ezekiel said that this great army would come from “the uttermost” or “extreme” north of Israel. Any world map will show that the nation which lies to the extreme north of Israel is the Soviet Union. Nevertheless, in past centuries, certain Bible scholars were ridiculed for saying that the Russians would someday become a great military force that would attack the restored nation of Israel. They were ridiculed because the Jews at that time were scattered throughout the world without a country of their own, while Russia was still an underdeveloped nation of peasants. The situation has obviously changed from what it was a couple of centuries ago. The Russians are now the most powerful military force in all of recorded history, plus there is also a great animosity that now exists between the Soviet Union and the nation of Israel.

***(UPDATE: Remember, this was written before the break-up of the Soviet Union. The dangers are still present and relevant. The Nation which lies directly north of Israel is Turkey and as alliances continue to change, Turkey will become a major factor as well as Iran. Both of these nations are specified in prophecy as well.)***

The Russians would like to gain control of the Middle East because in doing so, they would also gain economic control over the

United States and Western Europe who are vitally dependent upon mid-east oil. However, in order to gain control in the Middle East, the Russians will somehow have to gain control over Israel too, not only to appease the other Arab countries, but also because the nation of Israel is located in a centralized strategic area of the middle east. Another enticing factor for the Soviets is that there are vast quantities of untapped mineral resources in the Dead Sea area.

Israeli military experts agree that their ultimate enemy is going to be the Soviet Union. This fact was borne out in the 1973 conflict which broke out between Israel and the Arabs. Because at one point during this war, Russia had military troops airborne and en route to the Sinai Peninsula until President Nixon called an alert which turned them back around. Would Russia now have such respect for a warning from the United States? Possibly not, this has been made evident by the recent Russian invasion and occupation of Afghanistan. Unfortunately, as conflicts continue to grow in the Middle East, it is certain that Russia will continue to play an aggressive role wherever possible.

The Bible tells of other nations that would join Soviet forces in a joint attack against Israel. And, as with Russia, these nations have also been traced through history and identified in our modern world. Some of these nations are now Iron Curtain countries and others are African and Arab countries. According to the thirty eighth and thirty ninth chapters of Ezekiel, Russia and these allies will launch an invasion against Israel that will result in the destruction of this Northern alliance by God Himself. This battle will be distinctively separate from the final battle on earth called Armageddon.

*Kings of the East*

Another great military power was also predicted to emerge and become involved in the final conflict of human history. The Apostle John referred to this great army as “the kings of the east.” (Revelation 16:12). The Greek words which have been translated to read “kings of the east” have more appropriately been translated by some scholars to read “the kings of the rising sun.”<sup>1</sup> These ancient words were once used to identify oriental nations and people.

According to the book of Revelation, this enormous army will come from out of the east and march across the Euphrates River and into the middle-east. In the ninth chapter of the Book of Revelation, the Apostle John reveals some terrifying information about this army. For example, in verses fifteen through eighteen of this chapter, it is revealed that one-third of mankind will be destroyed by this ferocious army which consists of *two hundred million* soldiers!<sup>2</sup>\*

These verses in the book of Revelation may at first be difficult to understand until the reader becomes familiar with some of the symbolism that is used throughout the book. It is also important to realize that the Apostle John may have witnessed visions of the future and quite possibly tried to describe twentieth century phenomenon in first century terminology. If in chapter nine, John was witnessing the mechanisms of modern warfare, how would he relate what he saw to people of his own day? The terrible judgments in the book of Revelation do not necessarily have to be correlated with any type of natural or technological phenomenon; but, it is quite possible that the “fire” and the “smoke” and the “brimstone” of chapter nine, which is responsible for killing one-third of the population, will stem from

---

<sup>1</sup> Some Bibles footnote this translation

<sup>2</sup> There are some differing opinions among Bible scholars about who, or what, is actually being referred to as the two hundred million horsemen

thermonuclear warfare. If, indeed, the Apostle John was given a futuristic glimpse of thermonuclear warfare, what better way would a man, who had no knowledge of atomic weaponry, describe the results which are produced by such terrible devices?

The prophet Zechariah spoke of a terrible “plague” that would afflict the people who made war against Jerusalem in the “last days.” Some twenty five hundred years ago, this prophet said that men’s eyes would rot out of their sockets, their tongues would deteriorate in their mouths, and their flesh would likewise be consumed (Zechariah 14:12). What is really extraordinary about this awful plague described by Zechariah is that all of the above symptoms would occur while people were still *standing on their feet*.

Up until modern times, such a “plague” would definitely have had to been inflicted by some supernatural force and, indeed, it still may occur supernaturally but not out of necessity. Many unfortunate atomic bomb victims of Hiroshima and Nagasaki were exposed to a thermonuclear heat that burnt their eyes out of their sockets, their tongues out of their mouths, and the flesh off of their bodies *before they even fell to the ground*.

This revelation about the destructive power of a ferocious oriental (and demonic) army becomes remarkably significant in light of the fact that Red China is now producing thermonuclear weapons. It becomes even more significant when we consider that Red China has, on several occasions, publicly boasted of its ability to launch an army of exactly *two hundred million soldiers!* John predicted the size of this oriental army when there weren’t even two hundred million people on earth!

*Antichrist*

According to prophecy, the Western European nations will also unite to form a great sphere of economic and military power. This great power will be the main instrument through which the “Antichrist” will be able to gain world economic control and create a false peace through a one-world system of religion and government. He, and a man who the Bible refers to as “the false prophet,” will institute a treaty with Israel that will *appear* to provide a final peace and safety for the tiny nation; however when Israel makes a pact with the “Antichrist” it will be the gravest error that they have ever committed in history, because this charismatic world leader will ultimately become the most cruel and inhumane dictator that Israel and the rest of the world have ever known.

In the thirteenth chapter of the book of Revelation, it is learned that the “Antichrist” or “Beast” as he is sometimes called, will prohibit anyone from being able to buy or sell anything unless they receive a certain identifying mark or number upon their right hand or forehead. (Revelation 13:17, 18). In order for this to be accomplished, the “Antichrist” will have to obtain total economic control and have the ability to “number” and keep statistical records of every single person on earth. At no other time except the present, would any individual have had the ability to accomplish this task. However, the advent of computerization has made this prophecy humanly possible for the first time in history. Right now there are giant computers which are capable of storing information about every single person on our planet. In fact, in Brussels Belgium, at the headquarters of the European Common Market, there is a giant computer (Which ironically is called “the beast”) that is alone capable of performing this function.

For many years, certain financial powers of the world have been trying to create a one-world economic system which will effectively stabilize and control faltering national economies. One of the goals of this economic system is to eliminate all currency by replacing it with a “cashless” exchange system. In this plan, rather than exchanging money for goods and services, all commerce will be conducted by using a credit type system. A person’s “paycheck” will automatically be ‘deposited’ into a computer and the monetary value will be recorded and placed into a central computerized account. In this system, a type of credit card will be used to make purchases of goods and services which will then be charged against one individual’s account and automatically transferred to another’s.

There are many top level sources which confirm that this computerized plan’ is being faithfully and methodically instituted. “Cashless” banking has been anticipated for more than a decade. Consider the following excerpt of an article which appeared in the June 1, 1975 issue of the Houston Chronicle: “World of Electronic Banking Is Not Very Far Off . . . (Chicago)... The day is coming when you won’t have to go to your bank on payday to cash your paycheck. You won’t get a check. Instead, your employer will have the funds automatically deposited in your bank account. Want some cash? Then go down to the employee’s cafeteria and put your plastic card into the machine, punch up your account and presto—you have cash. But, why bother with cash? When you go shopping for groceries, just present your card for payment. The store will automatically transfer funds from your checking account to pay the bill. And while you’re at it, you can also transfer funds from your

checking to savings account or from your bank account to your savings and loan account.”<sup>1</sup>

A one-world computerized system is becoming more of a reality every day. Little by little, society is being programmed to receive such a system with open arms. Many employees are already enjoying the convenience of having their paychecks automatically deposited in their banks. While the use of twenty four hour computerized “tellers” is also becoming increasingly popular. Local grocery stores are installing rapid computerized checkout lanes and the worldwide use and acceptance of standard charge cards is also helping to pave the way for this economic nightmare.

Throughout the world, people are becoming used to the idea of receiving “numbers” that are used to facilitate the gathering and storing of information by computers. In the United States, for example, some school children are even being required to receive social security numbers which will remain with them for life. And, unfortunately the preceding examples represent only a few of the many conditioning processes which are now taking place.

A computerized standard currency is already being used in the world market. It is based upon the value of leading world currencies, but it involves no transfer of paper. This electronic currency is known as “SDR” which means “Special Drawing Right” and represents only a foretaste of things to come.

Certain problems have been anticipated by organizers of this future economic system. One of them involves the effective use of a “Credit Card.” If a person must have a “Credit Card” to buy or sell, serious

---

<sup>1</sup> The Houston Chronicle, June 1, 1975 as quoted by Wally Wood Jr. “Cashless Society—A World Without Money” (An article published by Southwest Radio Church, Oklahoma City, Oklahoma, 1975)

problems could arise due to theft or loss of the card. To alleviate this anticipated problem, suggestions have actually been made to implement a system at some point in time which will require an individual to receive a type of permanent “tattoo” on his or her body to replace the need for a card and eliminate the problem of theft or loss. This “tattoo” would probably be cosmetically invisible unless subjected to infra red light or some other form of detection.

People who have no idea of what the Bible says have actually suggested that this identification mark be placed on the hand or forehead. The hand would be preferable but it could not be used for amputees or small children. A child’s forehead would be marked once for life because it is the one area of the body which experiences the least proportional growth. A child’s hand would have to be re-marked within years because of excessive distortion of the number due to the development of the hand.

All of this may sound like a fictional yarn from the “Twilight Zone” but nevertheless such thoughts have been pondered by international organizers of a one-world economic structure. In 1975, “Southwest Radio Church” published an article (which is still available) entitled “Cashless Society—A World Without Money.” In this article, the author quotes statements from many excellent sources which serve to verify the existence of an international movement toward a “Cashless Society.” Of particular interest in this article is a paragraph which contains a quotation from Senior Scholastic magazine. The paragraph reads as follows: “The technology for such a system is already available. The September 20, 1973, issue of “Senior Scholastics” magazine, a secular news magazine for high school and college students, carried on the front cover a full color artist’s rendering of young people representing various races and ethnic groups with their computer



numbers tattooed on their foreheads. The accompanying article was entitled: “Public Needs and Private Rights—Who is Watching You?” The article reads in part: ‘All buying and selling in the program will be done by computer. No currency, no change, no checks. In the program, people would receive a number that had been assigned them tattooed in their wrist or forehead. The number is put on by laser beam and cannot be felt. The number in the body is not seen with the naked eye and is as permanent as your fingerprints. All items of consumer goods will be marked with a computer mark. The computer outlet in the store which picks up the number on the items at the check stand will also pick up the number in the person’s body and automatically total the price and deduct the amount from the person’s *Special Drawing Rights* account...’<sup>1</sup>

The world is being conditioned to accept a system that will provide some sound solutions to worldwide economic problems. The system itself may be practical and basically harmless at its inception, but, at some point in time this “cashless” system may quite possibly become the very instrument through which the “Antichrist” is able to gain worldwide economic control. Once such a system is established, a world dictator could step in and require people to swear their allegiance to him by receiving a special mark. He could make it impossible for anyone to “buy or sell” who did not possess this symbol of allegiance. A person who had access to this kind of power could eventually demand to be worshiped as God Himself.

### *Knowledge without Wisdom*

---

<sup>1</sup> Wood, Wally Jr. “Cashless Society—World Without Money” (Southwest Radio Church, Box 1144 Oklahoma City, Oklahoma 73101, copyright 1975 reprints can be obtained

There are literally scores of detailed Biblical prophecies about the “end times” which are rapidly being fulfilled in this generation. They are falling into place at a time when science and technology have skyrocketed into a realm of knowledge that would have been unimaginable one hundred years ago. The words of the Lord’s messenger as recorded in the book of Daniel become extremely significant in our advanced technological society because the fourth verse of Daniel, chapter twelve says: “But as for you Daniel, conceal these words and seal up the book until the *end of time*; many will go back and forth (possibly speaking of travel) *and knowledge will increase.*” (The “sealing” of the book is later explained to mean that people would not be able to *understand* what Daniel was writing until the end of time).

This generation has experienced a greater increase in “knowledge” than all the other generations of history combined. People who lived one hundred years ago were not too much more technologically advanced than people who lived two thousand years ago. And, what is really ironic is that this sudden burst of scientific knowledge in the twentieth century may quite possibly contribute to the very destruction of the human race.

Because of the spectacular scientific achievements which have been made during this present generation, many people have developed a false confidence about the ability of scientists to cope with the many perilous problems that the world is currently facing. This false confidence exists because most people have willfully ignored the magnitude of the dilemmas which threaten mankind’s very existence. The “civilized” world is full of “ostriches” who think that sticking their heads in the sand will make the problems disappear and such people have made the mistake of assuming that; since science and technology

have overcome major problems in the past, the obstacles of the present and future will likewise be conquered. However, in spite of the extremely rapid progress that is continuously being achieved in all fields of science and technology, many of the world's top scientific authorities have recently had to abandon their hopes of averting a future worldwide holocaust.

Without having any knowledge of Bible prophecy whatsoever, a person who *honestly* evaluates the problems which threaten the human race will realize that history is racing toward an abrupt ending. This generation is threatened by three major problems which modern science and international governments have yet been unable to solve. In spite of countless efforts to solve them, these three perils continue to escalate as never before. No other generation in history has ever been universally endangered by (1) *the population explosion*, (2) *the contamination of our earth and atmosphere*, (3) *the threat of nuclear war*.

### *Population*

The first of these problems, the population explosion, is out of control. It took thousands of years for the human race to reach a population of one billion by the year 1850. It then only took eighty years for the population to double and reach its second billion by 1930. In less than fifty years, the population doubled once more and reached four billion by 1976. Now the population is approaching five billion and it will theoretically double within thirty five years (according to present growth rates). This of course will be impossible because there is not enough available food on earth to feed that many people.

***UPDATE: Many changes have taken place in population control and growth rates since the writing of this book. The overall rate has***

*slowed down and at current projections; the world population will be at about 9.3 billion in the year 2050. However, there are still certain regions of the world that are experiencing population explosions that threaten food supplies. The vast resources that God has made available on our planet are more than enough to support huge increases in population if there weren't other factors involved. Population growth has become one of the political factors that has been used to create a sense of urgency to establish a one-world government.*

The population explosion is being accompanied by many terrible side effects, but, the greatest of these is hunger. The great famines are already plaguing the third world countries and it won't be long before the rest of the world begins to suffer. As resources become scarcer due to a rapidly increasing demand, the death rate will continue to spiral upward.

Many dedicated scientists have become frustrated in their attempts to solve the deadly hunger problem. Dr. Norman Borlaug, the man who helped launch "the green revolution" (a worldwide program to increase food supplies) was finally forced to admit that "the green revolution is dead."<sup>1</sup> According to Dr. Borlaug, the possibility for the success of the "green revolution" was destroyed when the Arabs began raising the price of crude oil. Inexpensive crude oil was necessary to operate the farm machinery and to produce the essential fertilizers that were required to make the "green revolution" effective. However; even if the economic barriers were suddenly eliminated, the problem of famine has now grown too large to be solved in the immediate future. Consider these words of Dr Borlaug: "I think it's folly to expect science to pull a

---

<sup>1</sup> Borlaug, Norman, as quoted by Hal Lindsey, Countdown to If f Armaedon (Westgate Press Inc., King of Prussia Pa., 1980 by adrist Corp. P. 30

rabbit out of a hat in the eleventh hour to solve the food production problem.”<sup>1</sup> Please remember that these words were spoken by a scientist who has been referred to as “the greatest living expert in the field of food production.”<sup>2</sup>

Those who are involved in food distribution programs are also confronted with numerous obstacles. Dr. W. Stanley Mooneyham is a dedicated Christian who heads one of the most efficient and effective hunger relief organizations in the world. This organization is known as “World Vision” and it has been able to overcome many of the obstacles which have prevented other food distribution programs from being so effective. In his book entitled “What do You Say to a Hungry World?” Dr. Mooneyham offers some insight into the enormity of the hunger problem when he says: “. . . the food crisis does not stand in isolation from the rest of the world’s problems. If we were dealing with just an agricultural shortfall, the solution would be relatively simple. But add changing climatic conditions and you complicate the problem. Link it with uncontrolled world population. . . and you further intensify the dilemma. Now compound it by introducing ecological factors plus deficiency of medical services, inadequate educational programs, discriminatory distribution systems, global economic inequity and repressive political regimes-add these and you’ve got an apocalyptic situation.”<sup>3</sup>

Millions of people are dying each year from starvation. And, as the population continues to skyrocket, world food supplies will diminish and the entire world will hang upon a delicate thread of survival. One major

---

<sup>1</sup> IBID

<sup>2</sup> Dr. W. Stanley Mooneyham as quoted by Hal Lindsey. The World’s Final Hour: Evacuation or Extinction (Zondervan pub. House, Grand Rapids Mich. 1970) P. 13

<sup>3</sup> Dr. W. Stanley Mooneyham as quoted by Hal Lindsey. The World’s Final Hour: Evacuation or Extinction (Zondervan pub. House, Grand Rapids Mich. 1970) P. 13

crop failure or one season of adverse weather could conceivable break that delicate thread in the near future.

### *Pollution*

The pollution of our earth and atmosphere presents the second unique problem that threatens human survival. Modern science and technology have produced many innovations that have served to provide greater “creature comforts,” increased productivities, advanced communication, rapid transportation, and a host of other beneficial (and often necessary) improvements. As a result of this technological evolution, the world has become “physically dependent” upon many modern inventions; “economically dependent” upon others; and “psychologically dependent” upon almost all of them.

The achievements of modern science and technology are now essential to most human beings in some way or another, but, some terrible side effects of technology have appeared in the form of pollution. Unfortunately, science has created a “monster” which now threatens human survival. Factories, automobiles, supersonic jets, and hundreds of other modern devices, are polluting our earth and atmosphere with poisonous gases and deadly chemical wastes that are slowly destroying our world.

The most obvious form of pollution is seen in the atmosphere, hovering above every major city of the world. Each year, several hundred million tons of pollution are spewed into the air by factories automobiles etc. . . . Our polluted atmosphere is full of many dangerous compounds that are continuously being absorbed by human beings. And these pollutants are directly linked to the rapid increase in fatal heart and lung diseases. The problem with many of these pollutants is that they

are not easily expelled from the human body and small doses continue to accumulate within the body, steadily increasing toward higher levels of concentration. These higher levels can eventually reach a lethal dosage in many if the atmosphere is not purified.

One harmful product of automobile pollution has been tetra ethyl lead. It has been estimated that Americans of this current generation have more than one hundred times the amount of lead in their bodies than those of previous generations.<sup>2</sup> The concentration of lead is reaching maximum tolerance levels in Americans so therefore much is being done to diminish its presence in the atmosphere. However, lead is only one of the many harmful substances that continue to increase in our atmosphere and our bodies. The entire world is exposed in some degree to the many pollutants emitted from major cities because the air circulates the earth about forty times a year. Therefore, urban pollution has even contaminated the glaciers of the Arctic regions.<sup>3</sup>

Air pollution is creating a problem which is far more dangerous than its obvious direct threat of biological poisoning because certain pollutants have been causing the ozone layer in the stratosphere to slowly deteriorate. Ozone filters out approximately 99% of the lethal radiation from the sun; yet, if that band of ozone which surrounds the earth, was tightly compressed together, it would only form a layer about an eighth of an inch thick! A 10% reduction in ozone could cause an increase in skin cancer of 25% to 60%,<sup>4</sup> and a 30% depletion of ozone could cause the annihilation of mankind.<sup>5</sup> If drastic preventative measures are not instituted on a worldwide basis, there is a possibility that the ozone layer will be depleted by thirty percent before the year 2000.<sup>6</sup>

*UPDATE: Many regulations have been put into place since the writing of this book. The pollution over many major cities has drastically decreased. Automobile emissions are much cleaner. Rivers and lakes that used to catch fire because of their pollutant content are now clean and many harmful chemicals are no longer produced. Good things have come from environmental “scares” but it is now obvious that many “scares” have been, and still are, more politically driven than scientifically driven. Some of the remaining statements in this short section are now no longer valid and some were greatly hyped by the scientific / political community. Others are still very valid and pose continued threats to human health. Each of them, whether valid now or not, represent a type of vehicle that can be used to create fear, panic and the ultimate embrace of a world system of control. There will be links at the end of this book to websites that provide more insight and current data into the problems that are now trumpeted as dire emergencies by the scientific / political community.*

The fluorocarbons in aerosol spray cans are known to reduce ozone so therefore a ban on fluorocarbon production in the United States has been implemented. However, a ban on fluorocarbon production will have to be established on a worldwide basis in order to be effective. However, even if a universal ban on fluorocarbons was imposed and totally enforced throughout the world this very day, the ozone layer could still suffer a 10% depletion, just from the fluorocarbons which have been produced in the past. This would occur because fluorocarbons will continue to rise and infiltrate the stratosphere for ten years after production. Once they are in the atmosphere it takes forty to one hundred fifty years before they break down.<sup>7</sup>



Supersonic jets and nitrogen based fertilizers produce nitrous oxides which also cause ozone depletion. Obviously, supersonic jets are still being manufactured and modern agriculture has become dependent upon nitrogen based fertilizers. Furthermore, there is a possibility that many other man-made products could likewise be destroying our ozone supply. If the ozone layer continues to deteriorate, the chances for human survival will become increasingly less. Not only will ozone depletion present a direct biological threat, it will also cause major changes in the world's weather patterns. Such changes would have a devastating effect upon world food production, just at a time when food is most desperately needed.

Probably the most dangerous of all forms of environmental pollution has been caused by the millions of man-made chemical mixtures that are used for a variety of purposes throughout the world. Only in recent years have scientists realized the extreme danger in many of these modern chemical substances. However, chemical production has been so rapid, that only a very small percentage of the whole vast quantity has ever been thoroughly tested to see what effect they will have upon the environment. Of those that have been thoroughly tested, considerably large percentages have been found to be hazardous in some way or another to human health.

The problem with many new chemicals is that they do not break down in the environment. They remain chemically stable so therefore their quantities continue to increase within the environment. Eventually these chemicals are absorbed by plants and animals and are ultimately assimilated by human beings. And, because of their virtual indestructibility, the human dosages of these toxic products continue to rise toward lethal levels. What is even worse is that some of these

chemicals can mix together in the body to form *extremely* poisonous compounds.

In their well-documented book entitled, “1980’s Decade of Shock”, Dr. Clifford Wilson and John Weldon made the following relevant statement: “Our generation is the first in history having DDT, PCB’s and other organochlorine compounds in our tissues, fat, and livers, lead in our blood, mercury in our brains, potentially dangerous amounts of radioactive elements in our bones, asbestos particles in our lungs, and numerous other dangerous materials distributed throughout our bodies.”<sup>1</sup>

Many of these dangerous chemicals have become so concentrated in human beings; some of them are being transferred from mothers, into the tissues of their newborn babies. In human beings, these various pollutants can cause many problems such as fatigue, nervous disorders, liver damage, kidney failure, brain damage, heart disease, cancer, birth defects, reproductive failure and eventually death. Unfortunately, most people are not too concerned at this time because they have not noticeably experienced any adverse effects from chemical pollution. However, this attitude does not nullify the fact that their bodies are indeed continuing to absorb chemicals that are steadily increasing in their proportions. It is a solemn fact that once these chemical proportions reach certain levels in the near future, the physical adversities will be inevitable.

Even if all hazardous chemical and pesticide production was discontinued immediately throughout the world, there would still be a “delayed effect” that would continue for decades. Human beings would continue to absorb and accumulate these lethal products because they

---

<sup>1</sup> Wilson, Clifford. Ph.D., & John Weldon, 1980’s Decade of Shock (Master Books, San Diego, CA., 1978) P. 95

would remain in the ecosystems for many years to come. They would continue to be absorbed by plants, animals, and ultimately be absorbed by humans for decades after production ceases. For example, even though the pesticide, DDT, was banned in the United States in 1972, the chemical is still being absorbed, and is accumulating, within the bodies of practically all Americans. This effect will continue for many years into the future and it will never cease unless other countries of the world also stop DDT production.

A synthetic compound called polychlorinated biphenyl PCB is even far more dangerous than DDT. PCB's have been used extensively in the electrical equipment industry but they have also been used in certain paints and lubricants. Like so many other chemicals, PCB's are also being absorbed into the bodies of most Americans.

Measures have been taken to ban production of these chemicals in the United States; but, unfortunately, PCB's will continue to present a growing health hazard for many decades, even if a *worldwide* ban is suddenly imposed. This problem exists because, since the beginning of their production, more than 1.4 billion pounds of PCBs have been manufactured.<sup>8</sup> However, only about 30% of these have been discarded into the free environment and only one half of the discarded PCB's have presented health problems. In other words, only 15% of the total manufactured quantity of PCB's have thus far reached a danger point in the ecosystems. Remember there are still more than 65% of the total quantity which have not yet been discarded. Therefore, many of these will ultimately work their way into the environment and be absorbed by humans for many years into the future.<sup>9</sup>

There are of course thousands of other hazardous chemicals which are polluting our environment. Some of these are far more toxic than

DDT and PCB; yet, they are still being manufactured and distributed throughout the world. Unfortunately, when certain chemicals are finally determined to be dangerous, the legal processes to ban their production often require a considerable amount of time. What is even more unfortunate is that the prohibited chemicals are sometimes replaced by others which are later determined to be even more hazardous than the first.

The world is becoming increasingly dependent upon all types of chemicals. For example, farmers are now using one hundred times the amount of pesticides that were used forty years ago.<sup>10</sup> In spite of this increased usage, crop yield percentages have not improved because the delicate balance of nature has been upset by these man-made chemicals.”<sup>11</sup> And, as this balance of nature changes, commercial farmers become more and more dependent upon other chemicals to correct problems that would have previously been corrected by nature.

Chemical addiction is not limited to just agriculture. All kinds of businesses and industries are likewise dependent upon man-made chemicals for survival and the world is reaching a state of not being able to live *with* dangerous chemicals, and yet not being able to live *without* them. Most chemicals, whether they are household products, pesticides, or industrial wastes; will ultimately be deposited into the ocean. Many of these products are directly expelled into our river systems and others are washed into the rivers by rainfall and groundwater. The river systems ultimately carry these pollutants into the oceans where they continue to accumulate and contaminate ocean life. Therefore, the oceans are slowly dying because of the increasing amounts of poisons which are infecting them.

Captain Jacques Cousteau is an internationally recognized and highly respected oceanographer who has dedicated his life to the intensive study and research of ocean life. For several years, Cousteau has been issuing some solemn warnings against the continued pollution of our oceans. For example, in 1974, Cousteau made the following statement during an interview: “During the past thirty years, my team and I have spent thousands of hours diving in aqua lungs and other underwater devices. With my own eyes I have seen the ocean sicken. Each month we pour so many millions of tons of poisonous wastes into the sea that in perhaps twenty years, perhaps sooner, the oceans will have received their mortal wound and will start to die.”<sup>1</sup> In this interview he also stated that the death of the oceans would result in the death of mankind. In another interview in 1975, Cousteau indicated that he expected a worldwide ecological catastrophe to occur before the year 2000, such a catastrophe, he said, will be “100% certain” and he predicted that “maybe nine out of ten will die.”<sup>2</sup>

***UPDATE: Fortunately, Cousteau’s prediction did not come to pass and we are all still here. As mentioned in the previous update, many wonderful steps have been taken over the past decades to decrease the pollution of our rivers and oceans. However, the eco balance of the oceans is still faced with serious problems and challenges that can’t be ignored.***

### *Nuclear Weapons*

---

<sup>1</sup> Jaques Cousteau, from an interview which appeared in the national inquirer, Oct. 12, 1974; As quoted by Hal Lindsey, “The Late Great Planet Earth—5 Years Later” (A taped lecture from “one Way Library” 1974

<sup>2</sup> Jaques Cousteau, interview, People, Sept. 15, 1975; cited by Clifford Wilson and John Weldon, 1980’s Decade of Schock, (Master Books San Diego, CA. 1978) P. 106

A final major problem which may pose a greater threat than the population explosion or the pollution of our environment is the danger of nuclear war. The proliferation of nuclear weapons has reached unbelievable proportions. Each year more than two thousand five hundred new hydrogen bombs are added to the world's arsenal. And how large is that arsenal? Well, more than a decade ago the destructive power of the world's nuclear stockpile was equal to approximately ten tons of TNT for every single person on earth.<sup>12</sup> Since then, the atomic arsenal has increased by many thousands of hydrogen bombs.

Not only has the quantity of hydrogen bombs steadily increased, the size of these weapons has likewise increased. The Russians are now capable of intercontinental delivery of 100 megaton warheads. And a single 100 megaton warhead has more destructive force than the combined power of every single bomb and weapon that was used during World War II.

Of course, nuclear weaponry is not limited to just the United States and the Soviet Union. Some of the less technologically advanced nations are now joining the world's nuclear club (including Israel) and, as more of these nations develop nuclear weapons, the threat of war continues to increase. In an arms control seminar in 1975, five experts from M.I.T. and Harvard University came to the conclusion that some type of nuclear war would be likely before the year 2000,<sup>13</sup> while many other military experts have arrived at even more pessimistic conclusions.

***UPDATE: The unforeseen collapse of the Soviet Union provided some temporary relief from such dire predictions. However, the fragmentation of the Soviet Union presents some serious nuclear weapon accounting and control challenges.***

This projected inevitability of nuclear war is based upon current world conditions and some frightening historical facts. For example, it is an historical fact that there has never been a strategic weapon invented that wasn't eventually used. It is also true that out of 1656 arms races since the year 3600 B.C., all but 16 of them ended in war. The 16 which did not end in war, ended in economic collapse. Plus, another fact to consider is that there has been an average' of only 5.6 years of world peace per century since 3600 B.C.<sup>14</sup>

As nuclear weaponry spreads throughout the world, it is only a matter of time before some insane dictator satisfies his urge to destroy his enemies. Undoubtedly, the instability of the human psyche presents one of the most unpredictable factors of the whole nuclear problem. However, even rational leaders may be *forced* into a position to use nuclear weapons as a ploy for survival. Imagine what the consequences could be when nuclear armed countries face starvation from lack of food. People in this situation would have nothing to lose by using their weapons as a means for international blackmail.

Unfortunately, any limited nuclear attack can only be countered by larger scale nuclear retaliation and eventually a limited nuclear war would escalate into an all out nuclear holocaust. Former secretary of defense Robert McNamara stated, "Once you use them (small nuclear weapons) you use everything else; you can't keep them limited, you'll destroy everything."

### *The Trilema*

---

<sup>1</sup> McNamara, Robert, as quoted by Clifford Wilson & John Weldon 1980's Decade of Shock, (Master Books, San Diego, CA., 1978) P. 7

Each one of the three' major perils - population, pollution, and nuclear war, would in itself be capable of destroying mankind. What really makes the whole situation desperate is that they are all three interlaced and interrelated. As the population increases, the demand for more food increases. And, in order to meet the demand for more food and the other necessities of a growing population, industries will have to be geared up and expanded. However, as industry increases, so does the pollution problem but, if industrial manufacturing is cut back, economies collapse and the threat of nuclear war becomes inevitable as entire nations begin to suffer from hunger and a lack of "creature comforts." Finally, if nuclear weapons are voluntarily banned or reduced by any one major power, history demonstrates that a tyrannical power will undoubtedly take advantage of the position of weakness.

George Wald, the Nobel Prize winning scientist from Harvard University summed it all up by making the following grim statement: "I think human life is threatened as never before in the history of this planet. Not just by one peril, but by many perils that are all working together and coming to a head at about the same time. And that time lies very close to the year 2000. I am one of those scientists who finds it hard to see how the human race is to bring itself much past the year 2000."

***NOTE: We have obviously gone into "over time"***

### *The Escape*

As world survival becomes severely threatened, people of all nations will desperately look for a leader who is capable of establishing a peaceful unity between governments because temporary solutions to

---

<sup>1</sup> George Wald, as quoted by Hal Lindsey, *The 1980's countdown to Armageddon* (Westgate Press Inc., King of Prussia, Pa., C 1980; by Acrist Corp.) P. 17



the problems which threaten mankind can only be attained through a worldwide cooperative effort. The Antichrist will deceive the masses by his supernatural ability and appear to provide an atmosphere of “peace and safety” throughout the world. Unfortunately, those who willfully subject themselves to his reign and control by receiving his “mark” will be *eternally* rejecting the one and only person who is capable of saving mankind. Remember, as the humanistic outlook upon world situations becomes ever so gloomy, the Christian hope shines brighter and brighter. Those who believe and trust in Jesus by accepting His free gift of salvation have absolutely nothing to fear because Jesus promised to never leave nor forsake His followers. His personal spirit is ever present within the lives of His people, and He is always ready and willing to meet whatever needs they may have.

In the third chapter of the book of Revelation, Jesus made a special promise; He said, “Because you have kept the word of my perseverance, I also will keep you from the *hour of testing*, that hour which is about to come upon the whole *world*, to test those who dwell upon the earth.” (Revelation 3:10). The world has had many “hours of testing” or “times of trial” in various geographical locations throughout history. However, since the Noachic flood, there has never been an “hour of testing” or period of tribulation which has come upon “the whole world” at one particular point in time. The seven year tribulation will be a terrible time of trial which indeed comes upon the entire world; but, Jesus has promised to keep His people “from” (or more literally “out of”) this dark hour of history.

God’s supernatural protection of His people from his own judgments is nothing new to God’s character. Before judgment fell upon Sodom and Gomorrah, God led His people to safety; when the terrible plagues fell upon Egypt, the children of Israel were not touched by them;

even when the entire world was destroyed by a flood, God's people found refuge in the Ark and when the great tribulation judgment falls upon mankind, refuge and safety will only be found in Jesus Christ, the eternal Lord and Savior.

The prophets of God don't lie! They were always required to be 100% accurate. If a Hebrew prophet made inaccurate predictions, he was put to death! (Deuteronomy 18: 20-22). This is one reason why the prophecies of the Bible are so astounding. There are many soothsayers and fortune tellers in our modern age, who make remarkable predictions; but their inaccuracies would have cost them their lives in the ancient Hebrew culture and their writings would have been trashed if that which they said was false or lead people away from God. Those who are not 100% accurate in their predictions are not true prophets of God. Their information may stem from a supernatural source but it does not come from the Omniscient God of all creation.

Remember, most of the prophecies in the Bible have already been fulfilled. Those which have not been fulfilled pertain to the second coming of Christ and the events which occur prior to His return. More than three hundred Old Testament prophecies were fulfilled by Jesus when He first came to this earth in human flesh and there are almost twice as many which relate to His second coming. Therefore, as surely as Jesus Christ walked upon this earth almost 2000 years ago, we can be twice as certain that He will again return.

***The Truth:***

*"For just as the lightning comes from the east and **flashes** even to the west, so will the coming of the Son of Man be." (Matthew 24:27)*

*"....This Jesus, who has been taken up from you into heaven, will come in just the same way as you have watched Him go into heaven." (Acts 1:11)*

*"Do not let your heart be troubled; believe in God, believe also in Me. "In My Father's house are many dwelling places; if it were not so, I would have told you; for I go to prepare a place for you. "If I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to Myself, that where I am, there you may be also." (John 14:1-3)*

["Scripture quotations taken from the NASB."](#)

## V

## GOD IS CRUEL?

***The Lie: A God of love could never allow suffering and evil.***

The world is marred with suffering and almost every conceivable form of evil. Some religions try to deny the reality of suffering and evil but their very denials often express an acute awareness of undesirable phenomenon. There are also those who claim that evil is only a relative term that varies in definition from one culture to another; however, there are certain *basic* standards of goodness and evil which have been common among virtually every culture. Therefore, since evil and suffering do exist, many people have incorrectly concluded that; either God must be unloving, or; He must not be powerful enough to cope with human adversities. However, both conclusions are totally contrary to the Christian perspective of the true nature and character of God.

The God of the Bible is powerful enough to command the entire universe into existence by the mere words of His mouth (Genesis 1). He is so constantly aware of everything that occurs in this world, that not a single sparrow can fall to the ground and escape His notice (Matthew 10:29). He knows what the outcome of every life and every situation will be before it actually culminates (Isaiah 42:9). He is a God of righteousness (Psalm 111:3), a God of holiness (1 Samuel 22) and a God of perfect justice (Psalm 19:9). The God of the Bible cannot lie, nor will He ever break a promise (Numbers 23:19). He is revealed as a God of compassion, a God of mercy (Lamentations 3:22, 23), and above all, a God of everlasting love (I John 4:16).

These and many other divine attributes comprise the whole nature and character of the eternal God of all creation. Each one of God's attributes is intrinsic to the completeness of His perfect being. He cannot compromise any portion of His complete nature and character without violating His perfection. For example, God's love cannot be manifested in a way which would compromise His justice. If God expressed His love at the expense of His justice, He might still be a God of love, but would no longer be a totally just God. Such an action would therefore violate His perfect and complete character.

To illustrate this principle, let us hypothetically suppose that an honorable Judge is required to try his own son for the crime of "vandalism." And, let us suppose that after examining all of the evidence; it becomes obvious to the Judge that his son is definitely guilty of the offense. In this situation, would it be right for the Judge to declare his son "not guilty" if this Judge had previously convicted other people on far less incriminating evidence? Or, would it be proper for the Judge to impose the required punishment in spite of the fact that the criminal happened to be his own son? Although the honorable Judge loves his son very much, he should obviously impose the required penalties for his son's guilt. Otherwise, the Judge can no longer be considered a just man. The Judge's love and compassion for his son *may cause him to personally pay the son's fine*, but, nevertheless, to satisfy justice, a debt has to be incurred.

God's love cannot be manifested at the expense of sacrificing His other divine attributes. Therefore, before anybody questions the love of God, it is necessary to take into consideration His other divine characteristics as well. It is also important to remember that it is impossible for finite minds to totally comprehend the thoughts, motives, and actions of an infinite God. In fact, God spoke through the prophet Isaiah and said: "For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are

your ways my ways,' declares the Lord. 'For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways higher than your ways, and my thoughts than your thoughts'." (Isaiah 55: 8,9)

However, even though the mind of God is *infinitely* superior to the human mind, He has not left His people without at least some degree of insight and comprehension of His plans and dealings with the human race. One of the best ways to obtain this insight is to become familiar with the information which God has revealed about Himself and mankind throughout the pages of Holy Scripture. However, God's revelation should be examined in its entirety before judgmentally evaluating a problem such as the existence of evil. It is especially important to consider the Biblical record of creation itself, before the problem of evil and suffering can ever be properly understood.

### *The Cause*

When God created the first man and woman (Adam and Eve), He gave them a perfect, uncorrupted environment.<sup>\*</sup> They were given the responsibility and privilege to govern the entire earth and all of its living creatures (Genesis 1:28-30). They also experienced an intimate spiritual relationship with their eternal Father and creator and their world was untouched by sickness, death, or any form of evil. Adam and Eve literally lived in a "paradise on earth."

When God created mankind, He took a calculated risk by implanting the gift of volition within man's being. God could have created a world full of "robots," programmed with unchangeable instincts to love and obey Him; but, instead, He chose to give man His own creative thought processes and the freedom of choice because God wanted a relationship which was based upon a two-way exchange of voluntary love and

---

<sup>\*</sup> The creation account of Genesis is supported by a wealth of scientific data that seldom reaches the public education system. These facts are well-documented in part II of this book.

respect. Therefore, He *gave* man the ability to accept or reject His love and guidance.

God provided a simple test in order for man to have a means of exercising His volitional right to accept or reject His love and guidance. Adam and Eve were told by God that they could eat the fruit of any tree within the "Garden of Eden" with the exception of only one. They were permitted to eat the fruit from the "tree of life" but they were forbidden to eat from the tree of "the knowledge of good and evil." God warned Adam and Eve that they would die if they ate the fruit of the forbidden tree.

Some Christians believe that God's test involved actual trees and fruit while others believe that the trees and fruit were only symbolic of deeper spiritual truths. Whatever the actual case may be, it is certain that *the test was relatively simple and the importance of the test was made absolutely clear to Adam and Eve.*

In spite of God's explicit warning, however, Satan tempted mankind into disobeying God's instructions. He did this by first convincing Eve that God had lied to her and Adam about the consequences of eating the forbidden fruit. He assured her that death would not result from eating such a tantalizing food (Genesis 3:4). In fact, he insinuated that the fruit was all that was preventing mankind from becoming like God (Genesis 3:5). Eve yielded to Satan's temptation and then offered the forbidden fruit to Adam, who accepted it without hesitation. It was at this point in time that sin entered into the human race.

Both Adam and Eve accepted the deceitful advice of Satan and ignored the truthful advice of God. They not only considered God to be a liar, they apparently chose to become independent of His fellowship and wisdom. Since Adam and Eve believed that they would become as "Gods" themselves, it is reasonable to assume that they no longer wanted to depend upon the life and guidance of their creator.

The failure of God's simple test certainly did not stem from ignorance or immaturity on the part of man. The first people were created as fully mature adults, both physically and intellectually. Adam and Eve probably had the ability to utilize 100% of their brain potential. Modern man, in his fallen state, only utilizes a small portion of the brain's potential capacity. In addition to their thinking ability, the first man and woman also had a spiritual relationship with God that was unlike any relationship which man has had since. They had direct, *uninhibited* access to their creator and all of His goodness. The violation of God's simple instructions by people, who were so enlightened, constituted a reproachable act. Although the act does not seem so terrible to man in his current state, by relative comparison, it was a heinous crime for man in his original state.

The knowledge of good and evil would not have even been necessary in a world which contained no evil. Nor would it have been necessary as long as Adam and Eve trusted in the goodness of God's instructions and followed His loving guidance. Therefore, when Adam and Eve rejected God, the first evil they became aware of was their own! Their newly acquired "knowledge of good and evil" was conceived in sin and rebellion so therefore it was used to testify against *them*. Because it was conceived in sin, it was not a pure and objective knowledge like that which God possesses. Thoughts which were once holy and acceptable became distorted and corrupted within the minds of Adam and Eve because God was no longer the governor of those thoughts. Adam and Eve experienced a deep sense of shame which prompted them to cover their naked bodies because their entire beings became infected with sin and guilt. They recognized that their inner thoughts and consciences were no longer pure or innocent, and this realization affected their outward behavior.



### *The Effect*

Contrary to what Satan told Adam and Eve, God did not lie to them about the immediate consequences of their failure to heed His guidance. The very moment in which Adam and Eve rebelled, their innermost spirits died. In other words, that essential part of man, which was specifically designed for intimate fellowship and communion with God, became dysfunctional. In effect, mankind became separated from the holy and righteous God by a barrier called sin. Nevertheless, God still loved man, but He could no longer retain the same close relationship with him. God could not compromise His divine attribute of perfect righteousness by allowing Himself to remain in *spiritual union* with any form of evil or corruption.

Man's spiritual demise eventually produced his physical death as well, because God did not want mankind to live forever in a state of ever-increasing corruption and misery. Although the soul, or consciousness, of man would exist forever, physical death would serve as a deterrent to the malignant, cancerous potential of sin and its effects upon the whole of humanity. Furthermore, death served as a constant reminder to mankind that this world is imperfect and needs to be corrected. The anticipation of death also served as a "checks" and "balances" of human behavior. This suppression of evil would allow mankind to live the happiest, most abundant life possible in his fallen state. Imagine what the world would become if the great tyrants of history were allowed to live forever!

Another consequence of sin was the deterioration of man's original authority and ruler ship over the earth. When Adam and Eve accepted the deceitful advice of Satan while ignoring God's truthful guidance, they somehow relinquished (or at least *greatly* diminished) their God given authority to reign over the earth and all of its creatures. They followed

the dictates of the creature (serpent through whom Satan was speaking) rather than exercising their own authority, which was based upon God's knowledge, to rebuke the creature. The serpent governed them instead of them governing the serpent. As a result of Man's fall, Satan was somehow allowed to enter into a position of power and influence over the earth and humanity.

This fact is borne out in several scriptures of the Bible. One specific example is found in the fourth chapter of the gospel of Luke, where, after fasting for forty days in the wilderness, Jesus was tempted by Satan. Consider the following words from Luke's account: "And he led Him up and showed Him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said to Him, 'I will give you all this domain and its glory; *for it has been handed over to me, and I give it to whomever I wish.* Therefore if you worship me, it shall be all yours,'<sup>1</sup> And Jesus answered and said to him, 'It is written, (you shall worship the Lord your God and serve Him only).' "(Luke 4"5-8).

God entrusted man with a precious gift. He literally gave him dominion over the entire earth. However, man took God's gift and handed it over to Satan. Although it is impossible for us to understand all of the spiritual ramifications of this transaction, at least certain basic principles can be comprehended. In order to better understand a situation which encompasses metaphysical concepts, it is sometimes helpful to relate it to a physical, or earthly, situation by using a parable which contains similar underlying principles. A parable can never illustrate every aspect of spiritual truth within a situation, but it can be used to demonstrate the feasibility of one or two particular concepts. For example, to better understand how man could have given away his position of authority over the earth without God intervening, consider the following situation:

Let us suppose that a modern day father gives his teenage son the title to a new automobile. The father obviously wants his son to respect the gift and use it wisely so he makes it absolutely clear to him that this particular car will be the only one which the son will be allowed to have until he reaches adulthood. Now, let us suppose that the teenage son soon decides that it would be more desirable to have money instead of a car; therefore, without consulting his father, the son sells his car for far less than its real value.

When the father hears of this transaction, should he go out and immediately buy his son another car? Or, can he take the car back from his son after it has already been sold? Obviously the answer to both questions is no. The father entrusted his son with a valuable gift. With that valuable gift came the explicit warning that the gift would not be replaced. The automobile was legally the son's property to manage in whatever manner *he* chose. Therefore, once the title was transferred to another person, the father had no legal or ethical way of reclaiming the gift – *unless of course he would be willing to pay an acceptable price for it*. However, even if the loving father did decide to buy back the automobile for his son, it wouldn't be right for him to do so until the son learned a valuable, but somewhat painful lesson. Until the son was allowed to experience the adversities of being without a car, any restoration of the father's gift would only be detrimental to the character of the son.

Somehow the title deed to man's position on earth was transferred into the hands of Satan. The earth was still God's creation, completely dependent upon the power of God for its existence; but, as long as God allowed the earth and humanity to exist, Satan maintained a sort of "legal right" to participate in the scheme of earthly activities. The extent of Satan's malignant participation however, is limited and restrained by

God's Holy Spirit. If this were not so, there would be absolutely no goodness whatsoever upon the earth.

### *God's Decision*

When sin entered into the world, God could have immediately destroyed the earth along with mankind. Just as an artist has the right to destroy an unsuitable painting, God had the right to eliminate His own creation. Such an act would have been within the guidelines of God's perfect nature and character because regardless of God's love for mankind, the infection of evil needed to be dealt with. God couldn't bypass it by manifesting His love and mercy at the expense of His righteousness and justice. Therefore, realizing the malignant, cancerous effect that unrestrained evil would have upon humanity and all of creation, God could have justly eradicated sin at its inception, just as a surgeon might have to eradicate cancer from the human body to keep it from reaping greater destruction.

Remember, the penalty for sin was death because a holy and righteous God would never allow Himself to enter into an eternal relationship with any form of evil or corruption. And, since God is the only provider of *true* life, any type of severance from Him and His life-giving spirit would constitute a very real form of death. Therefore, even if God merely withdrew Himself totally from humanity, mankind would still eventually reap a terrible destruction.

However, instead of abruptly ending humanity, or completely withdrawing Himself from earthly affairs and allowing sin to eventually destroy mankind by itself, God chose to deal with sin in another special way. He allowed the earth and mankind to exist because He knew of a way to *cure* the cancer of sin without irreparably destroying the beings that became infected by sin. In fact, since God has all foreknowledge,

He apparently knew that man would fall before the world was ever created; however, man was nevertheless created because God had a preconceived plan of redemption for the human race.

God knew beforehand that Satan would try to thwart His intended purpose of creating a special race of beings who would share in His love and righteousness throughout all eternity; but, Satan's interference would not prevent God from accomplishing this purpose. Although God knew that the infection of sin would be a "hereditary" trait within the nature of every human being, He nevertheless permitted an infected humanity to exist because He conceived of a way which would eventually *eliminate* that "hereditary trait." However, because of the gift of volition, He realized that there would be those who would reject His love and His plan of redemption; but, He also knew that there would be multitudes of people who *would* be willing to come to Him for eternal salvation, and, because of this, the whole plan of creation was apparently deemed worthwhile.

### *God's involvement*

Because of God's deep love for man, He designed a plan which would not only provide a remedy for sin; it would also restore man to an even greater spiritual relationship with God than was originally enjoyed before man's fall. This plan would allow God to be loving and merciful, yet, without sacrificing His attributes of righteousness or justice. However, the cure for sin was to be very costly, yet God was willing to pay the entire price Himself in order for man to be eternally delivered from sin and its effects.

In order to achieve His final "cure," God chose to remain actively involved in human lives and affairs. Man was still *spiritually* separated from God because of the barrier of sin but, nevertheless, God was still

able to communicate with mankind and assist him in coping with his spiritual condition through various indirect means and channels. However, the extent of God's involvement was based in part upon human volition, therefore, any "healing" within the human race depended somewhat upon man's willingness to be healed. God provided an unlimited source of benevolent assistance for the human race, but man had to be willing to receive that assistance and also to *share in the distribution* of God's benevolence to others throughout the world.

Although the human race was no longer in a position to have the same direct, uninhibited fellowship with God, God was still able to use individual people as instruments or channels through whom He could reveal Himself and His remedy for sin to the world as a whole. God chose to allow His Spirit to work upon, and within, the lives of people who would be willing to act as His messengers; and, because of this, man himself became the *main* instrument through whom God would touch the world. In this respect, man was given some degree of responsibility to participate in God's program of healing and redemption.

### *God's Progressive Therapy*

When man first sinned, God's plan of redemption was put into effect immediately. However, it would require a considerable amount of "spiritual therapy" and preparation in history before the "final cure" would be administered by God. The Bible contains a progressive, historical revelation of this curative intervention into the human race.

Apparently sin had such a devastating effect upon mankind and his relationship with God, that the re-establishment of a volitional union between God and man required a gradual "therapy," or preparation, of the human race to receive God's final cure for sin. Since mankind had become so alienated from God and His righteous character, it would have been impossible for man to tolerate a sudden exposure to the complete

holy radiance of God's entire being. The Bible indicates in the Old Testament that such an exposure would have caused death. (Exodus 33:20 also John 1:18). Therefore, God often appeared to man in the forms of fire, clouds, light, and even theophanies (which were human forms that only reflected a limited revelation of God's entire spiritual being).

It would have also been difficult for humanity to totally comprehend a sudden and complete revelation of God's spiritual truths. Therefore, God's truth was progressively revealed and illuminated throughout history. It was apparently necessary for humanity to acquire a gradual education which was based upon human experience in conjunction with each individual's desire to draw closer to God. Apparently man needed to experience the benefits of living within God's guidelines, and to contrast that experience with the effects of living outside of those guidelines. Just as in the previous story about the teenage son who needed to experience the adversities of being without a car for awhile; humanity likewise needed to experience the adversities of being spiritually separated from the source of all goodness before being allowed to enter into eternal fellowship with that source.

Personal experience is an essential part of any learning process; but, the recorded experiences of others are also beneficial. Each individual can avoid unnecessary failures by paying attention to the mistakes and successes of other people. That is why the cumulative record of human experience as recorded in the Bible can serve to accomplish this same purpose. The Bible helps to establish the validity of God's precepts while it demonstrates the foolishness of trying to live apart from God. Because of this, people in this generation could avoid unnecessary spiritual despair by being more attentive to the record of Holy Scripture, but, unfortunately, most people completely disregard it.

God's plan of redemption is progressively revealed from the first pages of the Old Testament through the last pages of the New Testament. The Bible is a continuous unfolding story which starts from "paradise lost," and ends with "paradise found." This revelation encompasses many generations of social and cultural development, but, for the most part, the Old Testament contains a record of God's dealings with mainly one special race of people.

Because of the faith of an ancient man named Abraham, God promised to bless the entire world through his descendants, the Jewish people. The Jews became God's chosen people and their history is recorded throughout the pages of scripture. It was through the race of the Jews that God would bring salvation and redemption to all mankind.

God's complete plan of redemption was not instantly revealed to mankind when sin and death entered into the world, but, many foreshadows of truth related to God's plan were revealed throughout the Old Testament. For example, a foreshadowing truth was revealed when Adam and Eve covered themselves with garments of fig leaves after sinning against God. (Genesis 3:7). It was vaguely symbolized at this point in time that sin itself would require some type of *covering*. This fragment of truth was somewhat magnified when God Himself had to make a more appropriate covering for Adam and Eve. The Bible states that God personally made garments of animal skins *to* cover their bodies. (Genesis 3:21). Therefore, this act obviously required the bloodshed and death of God's own *innocent* creatures. Up until this time there had been no bloodshed of any kind upon the earth and this act was a prefigure of three elements of truth which would later be clearly revealed by God. The first element of truth was that "the wages of sin is death" (Romans 6:23). The second was: "without the shedding of blood there is no forgiveness" (Hebrews 9:22). And the third element of truth was that



God *Himself* would have to provide the only sufficient remedy or *covering* for sin in the world.

As time progressed, numerous reflections of God's eternal plan of salvation were symbolically revealed throughout the remainder of the Old Testament. In many cases, these reflections became much clearer and more meaningful. Of particular significance was the Hebrew system of sacrifice and, although the concept of animal sacrifice seems cruel to most people of modern cultures, it served as an effective means of "communication by demonstration" to the ancient Hebrews and their forefathers.

To better understand this, it is important to remember that God's participation in human affairs was affected by certain cultural limitations and moral values which resulted from the infection of sin. Jesus Himself indicated this when He was asked by some of the Jewish religious leaders if it was lawful for a man to divorce his wife. Jesus replied, "What did Moses command you"? And they said 'Moses permitted *a* man to write a certificate of divorce and send her away.' But Jesus said to them, '*Because of your hardness of heart he wrote you this commandment.* But from the beginning of creation, God made them male and female. For this cause *a* man shall leave his father and mother, and the two shall become one flesh . . . *What therefore God has joined together, let no man separate*.'" (Mark 10:3-9). Thus, God's communication to mankind was generally within the realm of human comprehension and cultural acceptability. To accomplish this, the spiritual lessons of history were usually taught in terms that were familiar to each generation.

Before condemning the Old Testament accounts involving animal sacrifices, one must first consider the cultures in which the sacrificial practices occurred. Remember, the effects of sin had a devastating effect upon human conscience and morality. Many of the ancient cultures of the

world became barbaric and decadent and the knowledge of God became further distorted as people ventured away from God's intended standards of living. Yet, in spite of the many misconceptions about God (or "gods") that developed, there usually existed a common feeling of guilt and an inner awareness of impending judgment for mankind among diverse cultures. Because of this, people often sacrificed their possessions to God (or "gods") as a means of earning God's favor and averting His wrath. These sacrifices often involved crops and animals, but remember, the slaughter of animals for food was a commonplace duty shared by most families of ancient times who could not enjoy the modern convenience of obtaining their necessary food from supermarkets. Therefore, the slaughter of animals for sacrifice was not as abhorrent to ancient man as it is to many modern people because animal slaughter was often a part of one's daily routine for survival.

When God reached into the Hebrew culture, He provided a *temporary* remedy for sin which was dependent upon faith, obedience, discipline and *sacrifice*. The Hebrew system of religion was understandable and culturally acceptable to the ancient Hebrews, yet it was morally and ethically superior to the religions of other nations of the same era. So, within the limitations of a somewhat uncivilized culture, the true nature and purpose of God began to be progressively illuminated within the Hebrew nation. And, just as with other ancient religions, a system of sacrificial offering was still an integral part of ancient Judaism, however, the sacrificial order of the Hebrews became more spiritually meaningful than the sacrificial practices of other cultures. In many ways the Hebrew sacrifices for sin were symbolic of the final, ultimate sacrifice which would be offered by God Himself for the sins of the world and, although the ancient sacrifices did not provide a complete cure for sin, they did provide a temporary remedy for the guilt which was produced by sin.

Through these sacrificial rituals, God was able to demonstrate certain spiritual truths that helped to alleviate the adverse consequences of sin. For example, in the seventeenth chapter of "Leviticus," God identifies the blood of animals as representing "life." In the eleventh verse of this chapter God says: "For the life of the flesh is in the blood, and I have given it to you on the alter-to make atonement for your souls; for it is the blood by reason of the life that makes atonement." The blood of animals was shed as atonement for sin because God's required punishment for sin was death.

The sacrifices for sin served as a continuous reminder of the seriousness and severity of sin. They constantly demonstrated to the nation of Israel that the penalty for sin was death; however, *the sacrificial practices also demonstrated God's desire not to inflict the required penalty upon mankind.* Because of God's righteous character, a penalty had to be paid, but, God was willing to "defer" the final payment by allowing His people to make temporary "installments" (so to speak) on the ultimate debt, by offering the life of *innocent* animals instead of their own. The sacrifices had to be perfect, or "without blemish" in order to be acceptable to God. This symbolically demonstrated to the nation of Israel that only an innocent, perfect life would be the acceptable, ultimate sacrifice for sin.

The remedial benefits of the sacrifices for sin would only be effective if they were offered according to God's exact instructions. This demonstrated the importance of obediently following God's guidelines and not human notions. It also foreshadowed the fact that any final remedy for sin would have to involve a sacrifice of God's own choosing and not one that is offered according to man's own precepts and desires. The rules and regulations of the sacrificial orders gave the nation of Israel the opportunity to demonstrate her loyalty and trust in God by adhering to His established guidelines without question or reservation.

In doing so, the Jews could receive a temporary relief from the devastating effects of sin. This was accomplished as individuals symbolically identified themselves with the animals that were slain.

For example, even before the elaborate Mosaic sacrificial systems were established, innocent lambs were sometimes slain as offerings for sin. When this occurred, the person offering the sacrifice would lay his hand upon the head of the innocent lamb. This act symbolically depicted the transfer of the man's sins and guilt into the lamb which would then become defiled and was therefore slain as a result. This act would serve to alleviate the guilt consciousness of the person who wanted to be made more acceptable to God.

The substitutionary death of a *single* innocent sacrifice on behalf of a *multitude* of people was well symbolized in the annual observance of "Yom Kippur," or the solemn "Day of Atonement." To better understand the symbolism of this special day, it is important to have an understanding of the Jewish Temple itself. Within the elaborate structure of the ancient Jewish Temple was a special room known as the most holy place or "Holy of Holies." The "Holy of Holies" was the place that was permeated by the actual holy presence of God and within the "Holy of Holies" was the "Ark of the Covenant." The Ark of the Covenant was a specially designed, ornate box which contained the rod of Aaron, a pot of manna, and the Ten Commandments. The lid of the Ark was known as the "Mercy Seat." The *Most Holy Place* was separated from the "Holy Place" and the rest of the temple by a large veil, or curtain.

The Jewish high priest was the only person who was allowed to enter the "Holy of Holies" through the veil, and, as a rule this was done only once a year on the "Day of Atonement." However, before entering the most holy place, the high priest would have to offer a special sacrifice for his own sins and would then choose two perfect goats to be offered on behalf of the people. One *goat* was slain and its blood was sprinkled

upon the Mercy Seat. This sacrifice served as a substitutionary offering or *covering* for the sins of the people who had violated the laws of Moses written on the tablets of stone that were contained in the Ark of the Covenant. When this was done, the Lord would look upon the covering of the blood and see the sins of the people no more. The high priest would then lay his hands upon the head of the other goat known as "the scapegoat" and confess the sins of the nation of Israel. These sins would then be transferred to the goat and the goat was then removed from the land and released in the distant wilderness. Through this entire sacrificial ceremony the people of Israel were made cognizant of the facts that they were indeed sinners; that the penalty for sin was death; but that God would provide a substitute; and that once their sins were atoned for, they would be removed from them and "remembered no more" by God.

### *The Plan Revealed*

The ancient sacrifices were merely foreshadows of God's ultimate cure for sin. They were only temporary remedies for the symptoms of sin, without lasting effect because the debt of sin required a more supreme price than the blood of animals. A glimpse of this truth was revealed in the fortieth Psalm of the Old Testament when King David wrote: "Sacrifice and meal offering You have not desired; my ears You have opened. Burnt offering and sin offering You have not required." (Psalm 40:6). This truth is elaborated in the book of Hebrews in the New Testament. The writer of the book of Hebrews says: "For the Law, since it has only a shadow of the good things to come and not the very form of things, can never by the same sacrifices year by year, which they offer continually, make perfect those who draw near. Otherwise, would they not have ceased to be offered, because the worshipers, having once been cleansed, would no longer have a consciousness of sins? But in those

sacrifices there is a reminder of sins year by year. For it is impossible for the blood of bulls and goats to take away sins." (Hebrews 10:1-4).

In order for God to remain an eternally just and righteous being, the infection of sin and evil needed to be dealt with. It could not be overlooked. The death penalty had to be imposed to satisfy God's required justice; but, because of His unfathomable love, and boundless mercy, God decided to pay the debt Himself on our behalf. The sacrifice of Himself would be the only sufficient way to once and for all satisfy the just requirement of sin without imposing the penalty of eternal separation from God upon mankind.

In order to accomplish this, God Himself entered the human race as a man, yet, He retained His divine nature. He became completely human, but, because of His divine nature He still remained God. He entered the human race in the person of Jesus Christ of Nazareth who came into the world as a baby boy through the process of natural child birth; However He was the first man since Adam who was born without an inherent sinful nature because He was not conceived by an earthly father.

The inherent nature of sin was transmitted from one generation to the next through the "seed" of each earthly father because Adam was the first-created human being and was probably more responsible for the willful act of sin against God than was Eve since Adam apparently "ate of the fruit" without question or without experiencing any enticement, or temptation from Satan like Eve did. (Genesis 3:6, 17).

So, the incarnation of God occurred within the womb of a woman called Mary through a supernatural conception by the Holy Spirit of God. In the third chapter of the Gospel of Luke, an angel says to this woman called Mary: ". . . The Holy Spirit will come upon you, and the power of the Most High will overshadow you; and for that reason the Holy offspring shall be called the Son of God." (Luke 3:35). As previously stated, God became totally human, yet, because of His divine nature, He

was still the eternal God. The "Son of God" laid aside His characteristics of total omnipotence, total omniscience, and total omnipresence to enter the world as a servant, but, *He never laid aside His divine nature*. In the second chapter of the book of Philippians, the Bible says, speaking of Jesus: "... who, although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped, (held on to) but *emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond-servant, and being made in the likeness of men*. And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross." (Philippians 3:6-8).

### *Could it be Possible?*

At this point it is important to briefly diverge from the subject matter of this chapter and clarify the Christian concept of God. Christians believe that there is only one eternal God, but that He is a "Triune God." According to the revelation of Holy Scriptures; within the nature of the one eternal God, there exist three distinct persons who are God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. God the Father is presented in scripture as the unseen, personal source and cause of things; God the Son executes the will of the Father and tangibly reveals the Father to mankind; and God the Holy Spirit is the unseen personal agency by whom the purpose and will of God is accomplished. The Spirit reveals the Son to mankind, and through the Son, establishes fellowship with the complete Godhead. All three persons of the Trinity are capable of interpersonal communication with each other at the same given moment. Each person of the Godhead has a separate distinction, yet, each is by nature co-equal, and co-existent as one God in substance.

Without question, this doctrine is extremely difficult to comprehend, yet, it is not impossible. In fact, it is the only logical concept of God that can be derived from the complete revelation of Holy Scripture because

the Bible declares with absolute certainty that there is only one eternal God; and; that there has never been another God formed before, nor will there ever be another God formed after the one and only eternal God. (Isaiah 43:18; Deuteronomy 6:4; I Corinthians 8:4-6). However, with just as much certainty, the Bible speaks of three distinct persons known as *The Father*, *The Son*, and *The Holy Spirit*; who are all referred to as God and are ascribed certain attributes which the Bible says that only God can possess.

Most people have no difficulty accepting the fact that there is a definite person in the Bible known as "The Father" who is equated with the eternal God (I Corinthians 8:6; I Chronicles 29:10; John 6:27; Matthew 11:25-27). The Father is represented as a cognizant, personal being and not some inanimate, impersonal governing "force."

Since "the Father" is obviously represented as being God, it is often difficult for some people to accept Jesus (the Son), or the Holy Spirit, as likewise being God. In *fact*, many people fail to recognize the Holy Spirit as a person at all, but rather as some sort of impersonal force like fire, wind, electricity etc. . . . However, a careful study of the scriptures will reveal that both "The Son," and The "Holy Spirit" are two distinct persons apart from the Father who are referred to, both directly and indirectly, as also being God.

The fact that Jesus Christ is revealed in scripture as a definite person who is called "the Son of God," is obvious. Isaiah 9:6; Luke 1:31-32; Mark 1:11; II John: 3; Romans 1:4). The Son is ascribed with attributes of omnipotence (Matthew 28:18), omniscience (Colossians 2:3), and omnipresence (Matthew 18:20). He also is said to be the eternal creator of all things (John 1:1-4, 14, 18) (Hebrews 13:8) and, according to the Bible, only God Himself can be credited with such attributes and credentials. However, in addition to possessing the divine qualities, Jesus was also directly referred to as God.



For example, the apostle John stated (speaking of Jesus): "In the beginning was the Word, and the *Word* was with God and the *Word was God*. He was in the beginning with God. All things came into being by *Him* and *apart* from *Him* nothing came into being that has come into being. . . *And the Word became flesh, and dwelt among us*, and we beheld His glory, glory as of the only begotten from the Father, full of grace and truth. (John 1:3, 14). And, in the twentieth chapter of the Gospel of John, the disciple Thomas is quoted as saying to Jesus: "My Lord and My God." (John 20:28). Some of the additional verses equating Jesus with God can be found in the books of: Titus 2:13, 14; Hebrews 1:8; John 10:30-33; Revelation 1:8 & 22:12, 13, 20.

Although Jesus equated Himself with God, He sometimes spoke of "the Father" as being "greater" than He. But such verses must be considered in the light of Christ's role on earth as a man such as recorded in the previously mentioned passage from the book of Philippians which states: ". . . who, although He existed in the form of God, did not regard equality with God a thing to be grasped (held on to), *but emptied Himself, taking the form of a bond servant and being made in the likeness of men*. And being found in appearance as a man, He humbled Himself by becoming obedient to the point of death, even death on a cross. (Philippians 2:6-9).

God the Son humbled Himself when He became a man known as Jesus of Nazareth. In doing so, He willingly "emptied Himself" by laying aside His divine attributes of total omnipotence, omniscience and omnipresence; but, in spite of this, He always retained His divine *nature*. He was a complete human being who experienced human feelings, emotions, and temptations, yet by virtue of His nature, He was able to completely subject Himself to the will of the Father, depend totally upon the Holy Spirit for his supernatural power and live a perfect life without committing sin. However, His voluntary mission on earth was never an

easy task, in spite of His divine nature, because Jesus often had to endure great physical and emotional anguish as a man.

Therefore, whenever Jesus spoke of the Father as being "greater" than Him, He was speaking from the perspective of a human, Jewish Rabbi. He was making a *quantitative* statement in reference to His position as a Rabbi who was totally subject to the Father's will, but He was never speaking *qualitatively* in reference to His divine nature or substance. In other words, Jesus said the Father was greater than He, just as we might say the President is greater than ourselves by virtue of his office. Jesus never said the Father was "better" than He (a statement referring to quality), just as we would never say the President is "better" than us; since he too is a human being like ourselves.

The Bible also reveals "the Holy Spirit" as a definite, cognizant person, distinct from the Father and the Son, but, who also is called "God" and possesses the divine attributes. In speaking of the Holy Spirit Jesus said: "And I will ask the Father, and He will give you another helper, that **He** may be with you forever; that is the Spirit of truth, **whom** the world cannot receive, because it does not behold **Him**, or know **Him**, but you know **Him**, because **He** abides with you and will be in you." (John 14:16, 17). From these verses it is evident that the Holy Spirit is a personal being and not an impersonal force because He sometimes *spoke* to the Apostles.

For example, in the book of Acts, the Bible says: "And while they were ministering to the Lord and fasting, the *Holy Spirit said*, 'Set apart for me Barnabas and Saul for the work to which I have called them<sup>1</sup> .... So, being sent out by the Holy Spirit, they went down to Seleucia and from there they sailed to cypress." (Acts 13:2,4). In addition to speaking, the Holy Spirit teaches (John 14:26), comforts (Acts 9:31), intercedes for us in prayer (Romans 8:26), and is capable of becoming "grieved" (Ephesians 4:30). Such traits are hardly indicative of an

inanimate, impersonal force. The Holy Spirit is a definite personage who, like the Father and Son, is revealed as being omnipotent (Luke 1:35), omniscient (I Corinthians 2:10, 11), and omnipresent (Psalm 139:7-10). He is sovereign (I Corinthians 12:6, 11), eternal (Hebrews 9:14), and was also involved in the creation of the world. (Genesis 1:2).

Not only is the Holy Spirit ascribed with the attributes that only God can possess, He is also directly referred to as "God" by the Apostle Peter in the fifth chapter of the book of Acts where Peter; after discovering that a man and his wife had deliberately conspired to withhold a portion of the proceeds from the sale of a parcel of property that they had previously committed to give to the Lord, rebuked them with the following words: ". . . Ananias, why has Satan filled your heart *to lie to the Holy Spirit*, and to keep back some of the price of the land? While it remained unsold, did it not remain your own? And after it was sold, was it not under your control? Why is it that you have conceived this deed in your heart? *You have not lied to men, but to God.*" (Acts 5:3, 4) It is impossible to lie to an impersonal, lifeless entity such as a car, or the wind, because only a reflective, cognizant being is capable of being lied to. In the aforementioned passage of scripture, Peter accused Ananias of lying to the Holy Spirit. He then tells him that in doing so, he had lied to God. Obviously the Holy Spirit is revealed by Peter to be a reflective cognizant person who is directly referred to as God.

The Bible contains many other verses which, both directly and indirectly, imply the absolute deity of the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit. Therefore, since there are three distinct persons who are identified as God; yet the Bible reveals that there is only one God; the only possible conclusion one can arrive at (if the Bible is believed to be God's trustworthy revelation) is that the three persons must comprise the one eternal God.

On this issue, some people will make a mathematical objection by stating that  $1+1+1=3$ . However, the Godhead is not "triplex," but is rather, "triune" and can be mathematically analogized as  $1 \times 1 \times 1 = 1$ . The entire universe reflects a Trinitarian creator because it contains a host of tri-unities within itself. For example, we live in a "space-mass-time continuum" which comprises the entire cosmos. All physical knowledge and experience can be classified under the heading of space, mass, or time. Each of the three is a separate entity, yet each is an essential component of the united "space-mass-time" continuum. Furthermore, each of these three entities likewise reflects a Trinitarian design. For example, space (as we perceive and experience it) consists of exactly three dimensions. Each dimension is distinct from the others, yet the three are absolutely essential to the composition of "space." Without all three dimensions, there would be no space or reality. The three dimensions comprise the whole of space, yet there is only one "space."

As with space, there are three essential ingredients in the composition of matter. Matter is comprised of energy in motion which produces various phenomenon. *Energy* is the unseen source, or power, which manifests itself in *motion*. The type of motion determines the type of *phenomenon* that is produced and thus perceived by our senses. Energy, motion and phenomenon are three distinct phases of matter yet all three unite to form the whole of matter. One phase cannot exist without the other two.

And finally, the entity of time consists of past, present, and future. All three unite to form the whole of time, yet one cannot exist without the other two. Dr. Henry Morris explains time in the following manner: "The future is the unseen source of time and made, real, moment by moment in the present. The past then proceeds from the present,

becoming invisible again yet continually influencing us with regard to the present and even, to some extent, the future."

Much more could be said about the Trinitarian design that permeates all of creation. Indeed, several books have been devoted to this one subject alone because of the many scriptural passages which allude to the Trinity and because of the many analogies which are available to illustrate the feasibility of a triune God.

Although the concept of a triune God is admittedly difficult for mankind to totally comprehend, our incomprehension does not constitute a legitimate excuse for the rejection of a triune God. There are many things in this world which are difficult to understand, but, which are nevertheless proven realities. For example, it is somewhat perplexing to imagine that the chair you may be sitting on is composed of trillions and trillions of tiny vibrating particles called atoms. Within each atom exists even smaller units called electrons, which move so fast that they orbit the center, or nucleus of the atom, billions of times in less than one millionth of a second. Our inability to fully comprehend this fact does not detract from its reality, nor does it prevent us from placing our trust-in the chair as we rest our entire weight upon it; just as our inability to understand everything about electricity certainly does not prevent anyone from turning on the light switch to enjoy the benefits derived from it. Therefore, if people trust in finite perplexities which seem to defy human perception and logic, why should they demand total understanding of an infinite God, before placing their trust in Him.

The most basic and cardinal doctrine of the *true* Christian faith is the Doctrine of the Trinity. It is a revelation of Holy Scripture and an historic belief of the earliest Christian churches (although some cults unintelligibly try to deny this). The concept of a triune God is one further indication of a faith that was not conceived within the limitations

---

<sup>1</sup> Dr. Henry Morris, The Bible & Modern Science (Moody Press, Chicago Ill, 1951, 1968) P. 24

of finite human logic, but, was rather revealed by an infinite God and accepted by His people, even though *it* defied complete human comprehension.

The Christian concept of a triune God is essential to a proper understanding and appreciation of God's supreme remedy for the infection of sin in that, because of God's unfathomable love for mankind, He *personally* provided the one and only sufficient sacrifice for sin. God the Father, sent His only begotten Son, Jesus Christ into the world to redeem the human race. Because of this, the Holy Spirit is now actively engaged in the ministry of revealing God's plan of redemption throughout the world.

### *God's Final Cure*

In order to satisfy the required debt of sin; God the Son took upon Himself the punishment which all men rightfully deserved. The eternal God of heaven humbled Himself, became a human servant, and allowed Himself to be mocked, humiliated, spit upon and finally crucified in order that man could be eternally delivered from all evil and suffering.

Jesus lived a perfect life, unblemished by sin or evil. Wherever He ventured, He alleviated human suffering and satisfied human needs. As a man, He always sought the will of the Father and never succumbed to the temptations of Satan. Because of this, Jesus was undeserving of death, yet, He *willingly* suffered one of the most heinous executions imaginable. He, who had been united with the Father from the beginning, experienced the horrible emptiness of being separated from the Father when the past, present, and future sins of the world were transferred to the innocent *Lamb of God* who hung upon a cross and suffered in our place.

Just as the sacrificial lambs of the Old Testament were required to be perfect and unblemished, so also was the "Lamb of God," Jesus Christ,

required to be perfect and unblemished by sin. If Jesus had sinned against God, His life would have been an insufficient sacrifice because He would have no longer been free of guilt and undeserving of punishment. Plus, He would have never conquered death through the resurrection from the grave because sin would have held Him in bondage forever. However, because of His perfect life; and because the debt of sin had been paid in full; death could not hold Him in the grave. Furthermore, if Jesus had been only a mere man, without the divine nature, His death would have had no more vicarious significance than the deaths of the patriarchs and prophets before Him. But, since God Himself laid down His own holy life as a ransom, there is no greater price which can be paid; therefore, the debt of sin for all time has been more than satisfied.

There is now no other sacrifices which can be offered as atonement for our sins except the precious blood of Jesus. There is no more need for mortal priests who offer continuous sacrifices to God on our behalf because Jesus is now our "Great High Priest" who continuously intercedes for those who love Him. Consider these words from the book of Hebrews: "And the former priests, on the one hand, existed in greater numbers, because they were prevented by death from continuing, but He (Jesus), on the other hand because He abides forever, holds His priesthood permanently. Hence, also, He is able to save forever those who draw near to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them. For it was fitting that we should have such a high priest, holy, innocent, undefiled, separated from sinners and exalted above the heavens; who does not need daily, like those high priests, to offer up sacrifices, first for His own sins, and then for the sins of the people, ***because this He did once for all when He offered up Himself***" (Hebrews 7:23-27).

At the very moment Christ died, the veil of the temple was torn in two from top to bottom while the earth experienced an upheaval in nature (Matthew 27:51). This event is well documented in history and was believed by the Jews to be an omen of the impending destruction of the temple. However, the tearing of the curtain may have also symbolized the new available relationship between God and man. It may have signified the removal of any *barrier* between God and man since all people now have access to God through faith in Jesus Christ. This thought is expressed in the following passage of scripture: "Since therefore brethren, we have confidence to enter the holy place by the blood of Jesus by a new and living way which He inaugurated for us through the veil, that is, His flesh, and since we have a great priest over the house of God, let us draw near with a sincere heart in full assurance of faith, having our hearts sprinkled clean from an evil conscience and our bodies washed with pure water. Let us hold fast the confession of our hope without wavering, for He who promised is faithful"; (Hebrews 9:19-23).

The preceding passage was written to some Jews who had originally accepted the free gift of forgiveness through Jesus Christ; then later began sacrificing animals again as an additional means of forgiveness. The writer of the book of Hebrews goes on to sternly warn these people by saying: ". . . if we go on sinning willfully after receiving the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins." (Hebrews 10:26). In other words, if we continue to rely upon any other means of forgiveness besides the blood of Jesus, then there will be no forgiveness of sins as long as we maintain this attitude; because there is no greater sacrifice, no further price, that can now be offered on our behalf.

The debt of sin has been satisfied for all eternity. The required justice of God has been administered. Now God can freely extend His love and mercy *without compromising His attribute of justice*. All that remains



for man to do is to thankfully receive His free pardon through faith and trust in Jesus Christ.

***The Truth:***

*“....God is love, and the one who abides in love abides in God, and God abides in him.”*

*(I John 4:16)*

*"For God so loved the world, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him shall not perish, but have eternal life. For God did not send the Son into the world to judge the world, but that the world might be saved through Him." (John 3:16)*

*Beloved, let us love one another, for love is from God; and everyone who loves is born of God and knows God. The one who does not love does not know God, for God is love. (I John 4: 7,8)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## VI

## IT ALL SEEMS HOPELESS?

***The Lie: Christianity seems too difficult, unfair, irrelevant and powerless***

Because of what Jesus accomplished, the Holy Spirit is now actively influencing the lives of people throughout the world, leading them to a revelation of God's plan of redemption, and then encouraging them to obtain the gift of eternal life by *faith*; not just a superficial faith which intellectually acknowledges that Jesus Christ is Lord and Savior, but, *a saving faith* which is procured by the Holy Spirit and involves an act of will and a conscious commitment.

A prerequisite of this faith is the realization of one's desperate need for a Savior. A person has to admit that he is a sinner before he can earnestly seek a remedy for his condition. Because, if a person has no realization of sin, then that person will fail to recognize any real need for a Savior. Therefore, the Holy Spirit influences the lives of people to create an awareness of God's supreme ethical standards and to demonstrate within the human conscience how each person violates those standards. This He accomplishes through various means.

Once there is an admission of guilt, then people must be willing and desirous to regain a proper relationship with God. They must be willing to allow God to remold their lives and transform them into the image of His Son, Jesus. This attitude involves a decision which the Bible refers to as "repentance." Repentance has a twofold meaning. It not only means to feel regret for past actions, it also means "to change one's mind." It

comes from an ancient military command which meant to do an "about face." God asks that we do a mental "about face" by consciously turning our focus of attention away from sin and the old self-centered way of life unto Jesus Christ, who will lead us into a new, abundant life.

To realize who Jesus is and what He has done is essential to salvation, but, such knowledge alone does not constitute a "saving faith." Each person must also act upon that knowledge by recognizing and admitting his or her own personal guilt and need of a Savior. Each individual must then consciously turn to Jesus for forgiveness of sins and eternal life and each must also be willing *to follow Jesus*. Unfortunately, it is this one prerequisite of faith that prevents many people from obtaining eternal life.

Many people recognize who Jesus is and what He has done. They acknowledge the existence of sin and the need for forgiveness. But, many who do so have no desire to change! They would rather continue to indulge in their sin, acting as their own "gods" and living according to their own lusts, instead of seeking a renewed relationship with God which is realized when one submits to the Lordship of Christ and makes a *sincere commitment* to know and serve Jesus. Our commitment to Jesus is the means by which our volitional relationship with God is re-established. It is a commitment that merely involves an act of will and is *not dependent upon good works or self-sacrifices*. Because of the power of sin, we may not feel that we are able to live a lifestyle that is pleasing to God but we must at least be *willing* to do so. God will honor our willingness by giving us more ability day by day as we enter into a closer relationship with Jesus. God wants us to want Him, and our relationship with Jesus demonstrates our desire for fellowship with God.

Since Jesus is revealed as the narrow "way" which leads to God, it is reasonable to assume that those of us who really believe this, and desire fellowship with God, will be committed to follow this "Pathway" no

matter how many obstacles we may encounter. The journey may not always be easy, but, God insures us that He will personally provide sufficient strength to overcome any hindrances along the way. He also reassures us that the rewards and comforts along the path will far outweigh any hardships. Even when we stumble or stray from the path (as we invariably will) the forgiving Savior will be anxiously willing and able to pick us up and lead us in the right direction.

God's path is safe and it is accessible to all people. Those who commit themselves to the path, regardless of how fast or how far they may journey, receive God's free gift of eternal life at the very moment they step foot on the pathway to heaven. However, there is only one way that we can gain entry to this path, and that way is through Jesus Christ because Jesus said: "I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father, but through Me" (John 14:6).

We gain access to God and obtain His free gift of eternal life by consciously acknowledging that Jesus Christ is the eternal Lord and Savior of mankind who paid a supreme price for the sins of all people by suffering and dying upon a cross on our behalf. We must then realize and admit to God that we have been guilty of violating His perfect righteous standards and are unable to live up to His requirements by our own strength and power. Having done this, if we consciously submit our lives to Jesus, seeking His unlimited forgiveness and desiring to live a life that will be pleasing to God; the very spirit of the Lord will come to dwell within us and seal us with the gift of eternal life.

At this point we become "born again" because God implants within us His Spirit, and a new nature which enables us to understand spiritual truths and apply those truths to our lives. Our own spirits, which were previously dead to God, receive a new breath of life.

### *God's Satisfaction*

Because of our faith and trust in Jesus, God is able to have fellowship with us once more, because His divine attributes of justice and righteousness do not have to be compromised. His justice was satisfied by Jesus on the cross of Calvary and His standards of righteousness were met by the life and resurrection of Jesus. Just as we receive by *faith*, the benefits of Christ's death on our behalf, we likewise receive the ***benefits of Christ's righteous life and resurrection by faith.***

The Apostle Paul wrote: "So then as through one transgression there resulted condemnation to all men, even so through one act of righteousness there resulted justification of life to all men. For as through one man's disobedience (Adam's) the many were made sinners, even so through the obedience of one (Jesus) the many will be made righteous" (Romans 5:18, 19). The Bible says that we become "hidden with Christ in God" (Colossians 3:3) and that Christ's righteousness is imputed to us on the basis of faith alone. (Philippians 4:9; Romans 4:20-25). It also says: "He made Him who knew no sin to be sin on our behalf, so that we might become the righteousness of God in Him" (II Corinthians 5:21).

Although we *temporarily* still have a sinful nature within us, a nature that rebels against the ways of God; fortunately God no longer looks upon that old nature because the debt of all its sinfulness has been paid for with the blood of Jesus. According to the Bible our old nature was crucified with Jesus on the cross of Calvary and we have been pronounced dead by God. Now, God only looks upon the new nature of the believer which is the expression of Christ's life within us. Understanding this, the Apostle wrote: "I have been crucified with Christ; and it is no longer I who live, but Christ who lives in me; and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and delivered Himself up for me. I do not nullify the grace of

God; for if righteousness comes through the law (good works), then Christ died needlessly" (Galatians 2:20, 21).

### *The Persistent Enemy*

The resurrected life is implanted like a small "seed" that will only grow and flourish as we nourish it with "spiritual food." Satan will try to stir up the old nature within us to prevent us from obtaining the spiritual food that is essential to proper Christian growth because he knows that any spiritual growth and maturity will ultimately culminate in the propagation of the Gospel and a fruitful increase of more dedicated Christians. Because of this, he may work to arouse our old lusts, or, he may try to dissuade us from prayer and meditation upon the Lord and His Word. He may try to discourage us from meeting with other Christians; and, he will especially try to destroy our faith in God's Word - particularly His promise of forgiveness and eternal life.

Remember, a death blow was dealt to Satan and all that is evil by Jesus Christ; however, the devil is desperately struggling to resist the finality of his inevitable demise. He is lashing back at God with the fervor of a dying man who struggles for his last breaths; because he thinks that his lying efforts will somehow nullify the plans of God. As previously mentioned his only means of fighting against God is to focus his attacks upon God's beloved creatures, *especially those who would come to God for salvation.*

Although some battles may indeed occur within our lives, as Christians we shouldn't be dismayed because "greater is He who is in you (Jesus) than he who is in the world (Satan)" (I John 4:4). It is God's war and He provides us with the necessary weapons and defenses to emerge as His victorious soldiers. And, as we continue to rely upon Him, He will lead us from "victory to victory and from glory to glory."

We become "more than conquerors" in Christ (Romans 8:37); not by our own strength but by His spirit (Zechariah 4:6). Remember, no matter how intensely or how relentlessly the battles of life may rage, the onslaughts of the enemy will not prevail against a committed relationship with Jesus because "If God is for us, who can be against us?" (Romans 8:31). Even when circumstances appear hopeless, God will provide strength to overcome those circumstances because God's purpose for us is to joyously prosper in all areas of life. Jesus said: "The thief (Satan) comes only to steal, and kill and destroy; I came that they might have life, and have it abundantly" (John 10:10),

Jesus will provide an inner joy and comfort that nobody can ever take away (John 14:27; John 17:22). He also promises us that He will never leave us nor forsake us (Hebrews 13:5). Therefore, God wants us to rely upon His many promises of a victorious life in Christ, regardless of what circumstances may dictate.

### *The Importance of Faith*

The greatest defense we have as soldiers in God's army is our *faith*. The Bible tells us to take up "the shield of faith with which you will be able to extinguish all the flaming missiles of the evil one" (Ephesians 6:16). In another New Testament letter, the Apostle John wrote: "... and this is the victory that has overcome the world - our faith" (I John 5:4). Jesus often stressed the importance and power of faith throughout His ministry because faith is the quality upon which God wants to establish our relationship with Him; but He wants our faith to be an objective faith that is grounded in His Word and founded upon the person of Jesus Christ. Faith that exists apart from Jesus is merely subjective and amounts to nothing more than "positive thinking." Although positive thinking is good, and extremely powerful, it cannot achieve the salvation of a person who rejects Jesus Christ, nor can it compare to the God-given

faith that stems from a *personal* relationship with the Omnipotent Creator). Faith is an expression of our love and trust in God and, according to the Bible: "... without faith it is impossible to please Him, for he who comes to God must believe that He is, and that He is a rewarder of those who seek Him" (Hebrews 11:6).

God could reveal Himself to the entire world with a loud voice and a visible manifestation of His awesome glory, but, unfortunately, such an appearing would not necessarily lead people into a relationship of deep love and trust. This fact was established with the Nation of Israel in the record of the Old Testament. No matter how many times God appeared to Israel and performed mighty miracles, there were always those who soon slipped into doubt and mistrust whenever circumstances seemed unfavorable. Many of those who were awestruck by the radiant-glory of God later turned to "gods" of wood and stone because their faith and love was superficial. Their relationship depended upon a gratification of the five senses or an arousing of their emotions.

God has, and still does use various supernatural means to provide proof of His power and existence. He still appeals to the human emotions and intellect in order to draw the attention of people unto Himself. However, His main purpose for using various means to reach people is to ultimately establish a proper relationship with them.

Unfortunately, there is an element within sinful man that always seeks for greater excitement of the senses and the emotions because things which at first seem exciting to us soon become commonplace. For example, the thrill of driving a new car soon diminishes and sometimes even our interesting relationships with other people can become boring. The truth is, if God visibly appeared to every person in the world every single day, there would undoubtedly be many who would soon take His appearing for granted and seek to become their own "gods" as Adam and Eve did. This fact is obvious because we live in a complex, organized



universe that is permeated with evidence of a creator and designer, yet, millions of people say that there is 'no God. Many people have taken God's innumerable proofs and manifestations of His existence for granted and demand further evidences before they will even consider a relationship with Him. Others search diligently for answers to justify their disbelief in the God of the Bible because inwardly they really want nothing to do with Him.

God wants to abundantly satisfy all the physical, emotional and spiritual needs of His children. Indeed, His heaven will provide an ever-increasing joyful existence for those who'll dwell there. He wants to give His children good gifts and establish a relationship that is marked by His constant presence , *but, He doesn't want that relationship to be solely built and dependent upon that foundation alone!* Would an earthly father want a "love" relationship with his children that was dependent solely upon a continuous showering of gifts which appease the senses? Or, would he want to have children who completely forgot about him and all his constructive rules every time he had to be away from them? Obviously not, that is why the Lord often tests our relationship with Him.

God is in the process of developing a love within His children that transcends the realm of superficiality. After all, which is a deeper love, one which is based only upon a person's power, appearance, and generosity or one which is based upon a person's inner nature and total character? God has revealed much about His nature and character in the conscience of each individual, in the beauty of His creation, through the witness of His many servants, and in the testimony of His written word. He has granted a sufficient amount of proof of His existence. And He has made this information readily available to all people on earth.

Although human minds have been infected by sin and are basically alienated from God's pure unadulterated truth, God does at least insure that each individual receives enough truth to act as a stimulus to

discovering greater truth. Those who *honestly* acknowledge the limited evidences of God's existence will be shown even greater evidences of His existence. Those who accept and respond to God's limited revelations of Himself will be progressively lead into deeper revelations; including His plan of redemption through Jesus Christ.

Our walk with God depends greatly upon faith and trust in Him. By our faith we demonstrate our love for God even if we do not visibly detect His presence or even if our circumstances appear to be against us. The entire Bible is pervaded with numerous demonstrations of this type of faith in God. For example, when the patriarch, Abraham, was seventy five years old, God promised him that he and his wife Sarah would conceive a child although they had been unable to do so throughout their many years of marriage. Both Abraham and Sarah were long past the physiological age limits of fertility. Yet, when Abraham was one hundred years old, Sarah gave birth to their promised child.

The Apostle Paul, in reference to this event stated: "In hope against hope he (Abraham) believed, in order that he might become a father of many nations, according to that which had been spoken, "SO SHALL YOUR DESCENDANTS BE.' And without becoming weak in faith he contemplated his own body, now as good as dead since he was about a hundred years old, and the deadness of Sarah's womb; *yet, with respect to the promise of God, he did not waver in unbelief, but grew strong in faith, giving glory to God, and being fully assured that what He had promised, He was able to perform.* Therefore also IT WAS RECKONED TO HIM AS RIGHTEOUSNESS" (Romans 4:18-22).

The writer of the book of Hebrews likewise endeavors to cite many examples of faith in God. He states for example: "By faith we understand that the worlds were prepared by the word of God, so that what is seen was not made out things which are visible" . . . "By faith Noah, being warned by God about things not yet seen, in reverence

prepared an ark for the salvation of his household, by which he condemned the world, and became an heir of the righteousness which is according to faith" . . . "By faith even Sarah herself received ability to conceive, even beyond the proper time of life, since she considered Him faithful who had promised" . . . . "By faith Abraham, when he was tested, offered up Isaac; and he who had received the promises was offering up his only begotten son; it was he to whom it was said, 'IN ISAAC YOUR DESCENDANTS SHALL BE CALLED.' He considered that God is able to raise men even from the dead; from which he also received him back as a type" . . . "By faith Moses, when he had grown up, refused to be called the son of pharaoh's daughter; choosing rather to endure ill-treatment with the people of God, than to enjoy the passing pleasures of sin; considering the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures of Egypt" . . . "By faith they passed through the Red Sea as though they were passing through dry land; and the Egyptians when they attempted it, were drowned." . . . "And what more shall I say? For time would fail me if I tell of Gideon, Barak, Sampson, Jephthah, of Daniel and Samuel and the prophets, who by faith conquered kingdoms, performed acts of righteousness, obtained promises, shut the mouths of lions, quenched the power of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, from weakness we're made strong, became mighty in war, put foreign armies to flight" (Hebrews 11:3,7,11,17-19,24-26,29,32-34).

The Old Testament saints were by no means perfect. They suffered from the same human frailties and inadequacies that we all suffer from. Fortunately, God remained faithful even at times when they were unfaithful, just as He remains faithful to us at times when we are unfaithful (II Timothy 2:13). The patriarchs all had their moments of wavering doubts but they eventually learned to trust in God's word regardless of what their five senses perceived. They relied upon Him even when it seemed as though He had deserted them or had failed to

keep His promises. They learned to "walk by faith and not by sight" (II Corinthians 5:7).

The Bible gives us a very good definition of the word "faith." It says that "faith is the assurance of things hoped for, the conviction of things not seen" (Hebrews 11:1). The "Amplified version" of the New Testament expresses this same verse as follows: "Now faith is the assurance (the confirmation, the title-deed) of things (we) hope for, being the proof of things (we) do not see and the conviction of their reality - faith perceiving as real fact what is not revealed to the senses." In other words, faith believes the word of God to be an already established fact, even though that fact may not immediately be perceived by our human intellect, our five senses, or our emotions.

When we come to Jesus as believers, we should come to Him on the basis of faith in His word and not on the basis of demanding some immediate emotional experience as proof of our salvation; or expecting an abrupt transformation of our outward character. Some people do indeed experience such immediate *results* of their salvation when they commit themselves to God but many others do not.

The new birth has been previously likened to a small "seed." Some people may immediately detect the implantation of this "seed" but others may not immediately experience or "feel" anything. However, a lack of outward emotion upon acceptance of Christ does not mean that God has not kept His word concerning salvation. The gift of eternal life is given at the very moment of our sincere appeal to Jesus. That is why it is important to base our salvation upon God's word rather than upon our own fleeting emotions. Our continuous faith and trust in God's promises will indeed ultimately culminate in a relationship with God that is filled with high emotions and a growing sense of God's comforting presence as we undergo spiritual growth; but, it must first be based upon faith, and upon faith alone.

Our salvation is obtained solely on the basis of faith. It is obtained by faith in who Jesus is and what He has done for us through His death and resurrection. It is by faith that we turn to Him for forgiveness and eternal life with the confident expectation of receiving such gifts. It is by faith that we choose to follow Jesus with an anticipation of His help and an assurance of His presence in our lives. Faith is the "catalyst" of our salvation. Our salvation is obtained through faith and it should likewise be *sustained* by faith. Satan will attempt to destroy our faith by trying to create circumstances that will cause us to doubt the reliability of God's promises; just as he caused Adam and Eve to question the integrity of God's word in the Garden of Eden. That is why it is important to continuously meditate upon God's word and learn what He has spoken. As we do this, even though our faith may be weak, God will continue to strengthen us with *His own faith* through the reading and hearing of His word.

When Jesus was tempted in the wilderness by Satan, our Lord rebuked him by quoting scriptures from God's word. We must learn to do likewise as redeemed children of God. For example, if doubts concerning our salvation arise, we must fall back on such promises as:

**"Behold I stand at the door and knock; if *any one* hears my voice and opens the door, I will come in to him and dine with him, and he with me" (Revelation 3:20)**

**"But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, even to those who believe in His name" (John 1:12)**

**"These things I have written to you who believe in the name of the Son of God, in order that you may know that you have eternal life" (I John 5:13)**

**"Truly truly I say to you, he who hears my word, and believes Him who sent Me, has eternal life, and does not-come into judgment, but has passed out of death into life" (John 5:24)**

**"For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that not of yourselves it is the gift of God; not as a result of works, that no one should boast" (Ephesians 2:8,9)**

**". . . if you confess with your mouth Jesus as Lord, and believe in your heart that God raised Him from the dead, you shall be saved" (Romans 10;9)**

If we have misgivings about God's willingness to forgive our sins, we need to rely upon such promises as:

**"come now, and let us reason together" says the Lord, 'though your sins are as scarlet, they will be white as snow; though they are red as crimson, they will be like wool' ' (Isaiah 1:18)**

**"As far as the east is from the west, so far has He removed our transgressions from us" (Psalm 103:12)**

**"There is therefore now no condemnation for those who are in Christ Jesus" (Romans 8:1)**

**"All of us like sheep have gone astray, each of us has turned to his own way; but the Lord has caused the iniquity of us all to fall on Him" (Isaiah 53:6)**

**"... the blood of Jesus His Son cleanses us from all sin (I John 1:7)**

**"If we say we have no sin, we are deceiving ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleans us from all unrighteousness." (I John 1:8, 9)**

If it seems as though God is reluctant to provide us with sufficient strength to live for Him, we can remember such promises as:

**"... those who wait for the Lord will gain new strength; they will mount up with wings like eagles, they will run and not get tired, they will walk and not become weary (Isaiah 40:31)**

**"Do not fear, for I am with you; do not anxiously look about you, for I am your God. I will strengthen you, surely I will help you, surely I will uphold you with My righteous right Hand" (Isaiah 41:10)**

**"My grace is sufficient for thee: for my strength is made perfect in weakness" (II Corinthians 12:9)**

**"I can do all things through Him who strengthens me"  
(Philippians 4:13)**

### *Gaining Strength*

Our relationship with God should be based on faith and trust in Jesus and His word. Just as we come to Him for salvation by faith, we must also learn to live for Him by faith. There is no Christian on this side of eternity who lives a completely blameless life. In fact some Christians, who have neglected their spiritual nourishment and failed to exercise their faith, have found it even more difficult to live a pure life than it was before they came to Christ. This is because they previously didn't have to contend with an enemy who desperately wants to destroy their Christian witness. Christians can make mistakes just as other people do; however, God considers the Christian life to be spotless because a Christian is continuously being cleansed by the blood of Jesus. When we stumble during our journey with God, all that He asks of us is to admit our faults, then to push onward toward the goal of a Christ-controlled life.

When a baby first starts learning how to walk, he doesn't give up the hope of accomplishing his goal every time he falls down. He remains absolutely convinced that he is capable of walking and only regards his failures as mere lessons from which he will learn how to make the necessary corrections to attain his goal. A spiritual baby in Christ may stumble, but, should never lose faith in his or her capability to overcome any obstacle through Christ Jesus.



Sins will occur in the life of a believer but they should not be taken lightly. Our sins may be forgiven by God but we will nevertheless reap the unfavorable consequences which, as a rule, accompany a continuous practice of sin. The Bible says: "Do not be deceived, God is not-mocked; for whatever a man sows, this he will also reap." (Galatians 6:7).

It is an undeniable fact that one of the most miserable people in the world is a Christian who indulges in a lifestyle that is contrary to what he or she knows to be right. This is not to say that our relationship with Jesus depends upon our good works or our self-sacrifices-because it doesn't! It does however; greatly depend upon an attitude of willingness to serve Him.

We may not feel *able* to live a lifestyle that is pleasing to God but we should at least be *willing*. Once we, as Christians, desire to please God, then God will begin to re-shape our lives and conform us into the very image of Jesus, yet; without destroying our own personal identities. This transformation is a process that occurs throughout the entire life of a believer. The degree of our transformation depends partly upon our responsiveness to God's many instructive lessons in our lives; it depends upon our desire to know and follow Him; it depends upon our faith and trust in Him; it depends upon our witness to others; it also depends greatly upon our consumption of the spiritual food which God has made available to us (the study of His word, meeting with other Christians, prayer, baptism, the Lords supper, etc. . .). But, more than anything else, it depends upon the grace of God, of which there is an immeasurable supply.

Those who have placed their faith and trust in Jesus can boldly proclaim with the Apostle Paul: "For I am convinced that neither death, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor

powers, nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.” (Romans 8:38, 39).

### *Prolonged symptoms*

God’s cure for the infection of sin in the world was administered through the life, death, and resurrection of Jesus Christ of Nazareth. The power of death, suffering and all evil was broken when Jesus shed His blood on the cross and rose again from the grave. Now God’s cure is made available to all people who want to receive it.

The only reason that suffering and evil still exists is because there are still millions of people who have not come to God for salvation through Jesus. Because of this, even God’s own people are sometimes affected by the influences and effects of evil; however, God is ever-present in their lives providing strength and victory over the power of sin until evil remains no more. After all, the worst effect of evil in this world is death; and yet even in death the Christian can say; “O death, where is your victory? O death, where is your sting?” (I Corinthians 15:55).

When Jesus arose from the grave, God could have totally abolished all evil and set up His own Kingdom with all the Old Testament saints and a few disciples who followed Jesus during His ministry. However, God postponed His return because He knew that there would be multitudes of people, not yet born, who would one day be willing to come to Him for salvation and eternal life. He also knew that a day would come when Israel, as a whole, would cry out “Blessed is He who comes in the name of the Lord” (Matthew 23:39) and acknowledge that Jesus (Yeshua) is indeed their Messiah. Therefore, the effects and

influences of evil remained so that man could learn and experience the adversities which result from being separated from the Source of all life. They also remained so that man could exercise his volition and choose between serving God, or serving sin and self. And they remained so that people could learn lessons of faith and trust before being allowed to enter into an existence that is void of all corruption.

Of course God will not tolerate evil forever. He has an appointed time in which He will return and establish His Kingdom. Until that time however, the world is a spiritual “proving ground” upon which man can either return to God, or be separated from Him for all eternity. And, although it sometimes seems that evil is being allowed to continue forever, in reality the whole human scene is just a flicker in the light of eternity. The Bible says that this life is like a “vapor that appears for a little while and then vanishes away.” (James 4:14).

Life is short, therefore evil should be contemplated and dealt with from a finite human perspective, but, it should also be considered from an eternal point of view. For example, when we realize that innocent children suffer cruel deaths while vile criminals sometimes live relatively long lives, our finite minds should tell us that there is something terribly wrong in this world and that it needs to be corrected because we perceive a drastic difference between the short life of the child and the long life of the mature adult. However, from an eternal standpoint, the child’s life span differs from the adults’ life by only a “twinkling” in the light of eternity. We must also realize that if God allows a child to die as a result of this evil death producing system that exists throughout this world, the child actually becomes the recipient of special grace because God accepts that child into His Heavenly Kingdom. Although the child is born with the same sinful nature that infects all human beings, the Bible contains several indications that children are covered by the grace of God; probably until they are

capable of making a cognizant decision to either accept or reject God. And, since God has all foreknowledge, the premature death of a child may be permitted by Him to occur because God knows that the child would have indeed accepted Him if allowed to reach the age of accountability. Also, the untimely death may often serve to draw others closer to God and, if nothing else, it is definitely a conspicuous sign of a world that is “sick” and needs some type of “cure”.

Although it is heartbreaking to hear of a child who suffers an agonizing death, it can also be comforting to realize that the child’s pain becomes an infinitesimal moment of anguish in a timeless eternity. In fact, God eliminates any memory of pain; He forever wipes away all the old tears; and the child enters into an existence filled with everlasting and ever-increasing joy and ecstasy. This of course does not mean that the suffering of children, or any person in the world, should be taken lightly because God has commanded us to do whatever is possible to alleviate human suffering and the very real horrors of the world. He has placed us in a position of responsibility for our fellow man and He wants us to become instruments through whom He is able to touch an evil world with His goodness.

Much of the suffering in the world could be eradicated if people were *truly* concerned about the misfortunes of others. It is ironic to hear people, who always have their bellies stuffed with food, voice their disgust in a God who would allow little children to starve to death when in fact; they themselves are allowing it by remaining in their gluttony and by refusing to offer any kind of assistance whatsoever. We must never forget that evil was brought upon mankind by man himself. If it were not for the loving spirit of God there would be no goodness at all in the world.

Another tragic symptom of a sin-infected world is manifested in the form of physical handicaps. However, many people with severe

handicaps have learned to live above and beyond their circumstances, by committing their lives to God and receiving His special help and strength to cope with any problems which they are confronted with in this world. Because of this, many “handicapped” people live far more joyous lives than others who have been blessed with perfect health. Not only have they gained assurance that God will grant them a perfect existence in the life to come, they have also learned that God will provide them with an abundant and meaningful life in this present world. And, in some cases, handicapped people have even received complete *physical* healing in conjunction with the psychological healing that God provides.

Mental deficiencies are another sign of an imperfect world. Unfortunately, many people are so mentally incapacitated that they are totally unable to care for themselves. If a mental handicap is so severe that a person is unable to comprehend or respond to God’s provision for eternal life, then that person, like the innocent child, is covered by God’s special redemptive grace because of their inability to cognizantly accept or reject Him. However, God’s requirement for salvation is so simple that many mentally deficient people have come to Jesus out of simple faith and entered into a joyful, saving relationship with the God of love.

Any type of handicap, physical or mental, represents an unfortunate “symptom” of an imperfect world. However, it is important to remember that there is no problem that is too great for the God of the Bible to deal with. The God of the Bible is a God of miracles and He is more than willing, and able, to meet the physical, emotional, and spiritual needs of His children.

Although the world is also full of social injustices, God’s salvation is able to transcend the inequalities of any earthly circumstances. It is unfair when some people have to be raised in an environment of poverty, hate and brutality while others are given an abundance of love and

material blessings; yet, no matter how unbalanced the scales of worldly justice may be, the merciful power of God is able to correct any inequity and His love is able to penetrate any barrier. Many people have arisen from the depths of human despair into a glorious new existence by *faithfully* trusting in God through a relationship with Jesus Christ. On the other hand, many others have rejected God's love, even though they never had to endure any real hardships or adversities in life.

A person's response to God's love depends more upon that individual's own will rather than upon his or her circumstances. The sons and daughters of preachers have grown up to become scoffers of God's plan of salvation while the children of atheists have grown up to embrace it. Many people who have had unlimited exposure to the Gospel have rejected it while those with seemingly impossible opportunities have received it. Even people from the darkest corners of the world have received revelations about God's plan of salvation before they were ever visited by Christian missionaries.

In spite of such miraculous evidences of God's ability to save people from any walk of life, there are still those who contend that their own concern about the unfairness of the Christian Gospel is the main reason for their rejection of it. They express their inability to comprehend how Jesus could be the only way to Heaven when there are so many other religions in the world. Although this may be a valid concern, it by no means constitutes an honest excuse for their *own* rejection of the Gospel. How many of these same people, if offered a million dollars gratis, would say; "I'm sorry I can't accept that because it's not fair to others. What about all the poor people in the world who aren't so lucky." By comparison, God is offering a gift of far greater value than a million dollars. And, not only is He offering a greater gift, He tells people that if they are really concerned about others, they can

take this same wonderful gift and distribute it to as many people as will receive it; without ever diminishing the quality or the supply.

### *Obtaining Good from Evil*

Regardless of a person's background or environment, eternal life is available to everyone who is *willing* to come to God on God's own prescribed terms. Of course, just because God's love reaches beyond circumstances does not mean that people should be unconcerned about correcting injustices and inequities. It does not mean that parents can neglect their God-given responsibility to provide an atmosphere of love and proper spiritual guidance for their children, nor does it mean that God's people can neglect their duty to reach the entire world with the true Gospel because the greatest positive response to God's plan of salvation will only be attained if God's instruments are working in accordance with His guidelines. If we neglect our God-given responsibilities, the influences and effects of evil will become stronger and more prevalent. As this occurs, the Gospel itself becomes *hindered*, but not stopped, and people reap the unfavorable consequences of living outside of God's protective guidelines.

It is important to remember however, that no matter how many spiritual obstacles have been placed in an individual's life, there is no barrier which the power and love of God cannot penetrate. Nobody will be able to justly attribute his or her rejection of God to unfavorable circumstances because many people have indeed come to God for salvation in spite of seemingly impossible odds.

Unfortunately, the presence of adverse phenomenon is often instrumental in effecting a cure for the infection of sin. This is because any type of serious illness or disease needs to be *detected* before it can

be *cured*. In order for a disease to be detected, it usually requires the recognition of certain symptoms. Once the symptoms have been recognized a person can then seek a competent physician to obtain a proper diagnosis. Then, once the physician makes a proper diagnosis, he sometimes has to emphasize the seriousness of a patient's disease before that patient will be motivated enough to submit to the required treatment. If a patient does then finally realize the gravity of his or her condition, and agrees to be properly treated for it, the administration of that treatment will often depend upon the individual's stature and the degree of his or her infection. In other words, the application of treatment for one individual may slightly vary from that of another individual until they both realize the final cure.

In a similar manner, the infection of sin needs to be dealt with in each individual before a final "cure" can ever be realized. First and foremost, people have to come to a realization of their spiritual condition. Unfortunately, this usually requires the presence, and the awareness, of adverse "symptoms" which affect their own lives and the world around them before ever realizing that all is not well with humanity. Unfortunately, some people require a bombardment of adverse symptoms before they will awake to this realization and seek outside help. If these evil symptoms did not exist, it would be difficult for anyone to detect the problem of sin, much less to seek a cure for it. If there were no symptoms associated with the spread of cancer in the body, people would suddenly die without ever knowing that they were sick. Symptoms like pain, fever, nausea etc. . . . , as unwanted and as uncomfortable as they are, serve as warning devices which indicate that all is not well within the body. Likewise, symptoms such as hunger, war, disease, crime, pain, depression, guilt, and even death itself, all indicate that this world is imperfect and needs to be cured.

In many cases, even though people become aware of an imperfect



spiritual condition, they will not submit to the proper treatment until they are made to realize just how detrimental that condition really is. Sometimes this realization is a little frightening; but, unfortunately, fear is often what it takes to create any positive motivation toward a cure. When Christians try to warn others about the disastrous finality of sin, they are often accused of being insensitive, or even hateful. Such an accusation is as ludicrous as saying that a mother is being insensitive and hateful when she warns her children about such dangers as fire, or poisonous snakes. How loving would a mother be if she neglected to impress upon her children an awareness of the dangers in life, merely for the sake of not wanting to create any “fear” within them? By the same logic, how loving would Christians be if they earnestly believed that failure to receive God’s cure for sin would result in everlasting tragedy, and yet they failed to warn others for the sake of not wanting to create fear or to “hurt their feelings?” There is nothing wrong with fear, if it is used to bring forth proper responses to potentially dangerous situations. Unfortunately, “scare tactics” are exactly what is required to motivate some (not all) individuals into receiving God’s remedy for sin.

The Bible issues a warning about a very real place called Hell. Nobody knows exactly what Hell is; but it is revealed in scripture as a malignant place that should be avoided at all costs. It has been likened to unquenchable fire, outer darkness, and everlasting torment. It is a place where there is “weeping and gnashing of teeth” with no hope or joy *whatsoever* because those who dwell there will be eternally separated from God and His life-giving spirit. Satan and his fallen angels are going to hell by Divine decree; man will go there by his own choice. God does not place people in hell; people will place themselves there by willfully refusing to come to God under God’s simple prescribed terms.

Nobody will have an excuse for not coming to God for salvation

because within each cognizant individual is enough God-given light to reveal some basic truths about man and his need for a savior. In the first chapter of the book of Romans the Apostle Paul wrote: “For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes, His eternal power and divine nature, have’ been clearly seen, being understood through what has been made, *so that they are without excuse*. For even though they knew God, they did not honor Him as God, or give thanks; but they became futile in their speculations, and their foolish heart was darkened. *Professing to be wise, they became fools...*”

As each person accepts and responds to God’s basic inner revelations, God will insure that that individual receives enough light to ultimately illuminate the one and only pathway to heaven. Unfortunately, many people continue to extinguish any degree of light which may be revealed to them and, in doing so, they willfully follow the “broad highway” that leads to destruction and hell.

A person’s disbelief in the existence of hell will not change the fact that it does indeed exist. Just because a man doesn’t believe in a force called gravity doesn’t mean that he will not fall to his death if he leaps from the top of a skyscraper. Some people claim to be “enlightened” enough to know that there is no hell; yet such people are confronted with the undeniable fact, that the most enlightened person who ever walked upon the face of this earth frequently warned people about the reality of such a place. Jesus Christ was love incarnate. He embraced the social outcasts, He healed the sick, He raised the dead, He performed many great miracles to satisfy human needs, and yet this same enlightened person adamantly warned humanity about the horrible torment of hell. He did this because He loved mankind and not because He was insensitive or full of spite. He wanted people to avoid hell at any cost because it is a place of hopeless finality.

There are of course some people in the world who are not

motivated by love when they speak of hell. Some like to create fear for monetary gain or sensationalism and others seem to receive a morbid pleasure from telling people that they are going to hell. Such people will be accountable to God for their motives, but their ill motives do not nullify the existence of hell.

The subject of hell should only be mentioned in conjunction with God's loving provision for escaping such a horrid place. Failure to do so would be as cruel as telling someone about the destructive, agonizing effects of a disease which they had contracted, without also informing them of an available cure.

It is far better to lead someone into God's Kingdom through an outpouring of Christian love than it is to try to scare them into the Kingdom. However, since some people don't respond to God's love, they may need to be familiarized with the eternal dangers of refusing to do so before they will ever be motivated enough to seek a cure for their spiritual condition. However, even if people initially come to God out of fear, their fear will soon be turned into deep love, trust, appreciation and respect as they come to know God through Jesus Christ.

God will use whatever means are necessary to draw people unto Himself. The guiding influences of His Spirit will often vary from one individual to another because of the many differences in human personalities and social environments. That is why some individuals may require subtle, gentle persuasion and others may require a sudden drastic awakening before they will *willingly* turn to God for salvation. Some people may need to be saturated with divine love and others may need to experience fear before *willfully* submitting their lives to God through Jesus Christ. God's influences may vary, but, they will not usually transcend the limits of human volition within each individual. The Holy Spirit persuades people to come to God for eternal life, but that persuasion should not be misconstrued as coercion. In other words,

God does not want to force anybody to come to Him.

It doesn't really matter what factors or influences are used to motivate a person toward receiving a renewed relationship with God. What is important is how each individual responds to those factors and influences. Unfortunately, many people willfully suppress any of the divine stimuli that would ultimately lead to salvation. Such people would rather be their own "gods" than to acknowledge the existence of a personal, omnipotent God to whom they will one day be accountable. Some would rather live debased lives, full of short term selfish pleasures than to admit the futility and ultimate dissatisfaction of such living. People offer many excuses for their refusal to accept God's remedy for sin but in most cases, the underlying cause behind such a refusal either stems from egotistical pride, or some form of immorality. Either a person is too proud to admit his need for God or else he is desperately trying to justify some type of behavior in his own life which he inwardly knows is wrong. There are certainly no intellectual reasons for refusing God's remedy for sin because some of the greatest minds in history have accepted it without sacrificing one iota of their intellect.

Wouldn't it be foolish for a terminally ill man to refuse the one and only free cure for his condition, simply because he didn't want to go to the doctor to receive it? Then why refuse God's free remedy for the terminal infection of sin? The remedy is available to all who are willing to go, by faith, to the Great Physician, Jesus Christ, to receive it. Those who come to Jesus by faith, will enter into an eternal living fellowship with the GOD OF EVERLASTING LOVE.

***The Truth:***

*"Come to Me, all who are weary and heavy-laden, and I will give you rest. Take My yoke upon you and learn from Me, for I am gentle and humble in heart, and YOU WILL FIND REST FOR YOUR SOULS. For My yoke is easy and My burden is light." (Matthew 11: 28-30)*

*"So He told them this parable, saying, What man among you, if he has a hundred sheep and has lost one of them, does not leave the ninety-nine in the open pasture and go after the one which is lost until he finds it? When he has found it, he lays it on his shoulders, rejoicing. And when he comes home, he calls together his friends and his neighbors, saying to them, 'Rejoice with me, for I have found my sheep which was lost! I tell you that in the same way, there will be more joy in heaven over one sinner who repents than over ninety-nine righteous persons who need no repentance.'" (Luke 15: 4-7)*

*"....If God is for us, who is against us? He who did not spare His own Son, but delivered Him over for us all, how will He not also with Him freely give us all things? Who will bring a charge against God's elect? God is the one who justifies; who is the one who condemns? Christ Jesus is He who died, yes, rather who was raised, who is at the right hand of God, who also intercedes for us. Who will separate us from the love of Christ? Will tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? Just as it is written, "FOR YOUR SAKE WE ARE BEING PUT TO DEATH ALL DAY LONG; WE WERE CONSIDERED AS SHEEP TO BE SLAUGHTERED." But in all these things we overwhelmingly conquer through Him who loved us. For I am convinced that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor things present, nor things to come, nor powers, nor height, nor depth, nor any other created thing, will be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord."  
(Romans 8: 31-39)*

["Scripture quotations taken from the NASB."](#)

## VII

## GOODNESS ATTAINS HEAVEN?

*The Lie: Doing lots of good deeds will get a person into Heaven*

A common denominator among most religions in the world is the belief that a person's destiny is determined by a gauge composed of moral, ethical, and religious standards. Usually, the attainment of one's highest destiny is dependent upon strictly adhering to those prescribed standards. And, although the standards may vary between religions, in each case they are designed to accomplish a similar goal; they provide man with an opportunity, and the means, to "earn" his way into heaven through "good works". They also satisfy an egotistical human notion which says that man is capable of becoming his own savior. However, in this respect, the true Christian faith is diametrically opposed to the religions of the world.

One of the greatest obstacles which Jesus had to contend with during His earthly ministry was the religiosity of many of the ancient Jews. Many of the Jewish religious leaders had developed attitudes of "self-righteousness" which stemmed from their outward display of obedience to the laws of Moses and Judaism. Many were convinced that their religious efforts were deserving of God's favor, and because of this, an air of egotistical pride was often prevalent among their ranks.

Jesus earnestly endeavored to expose the fallacy of such humanistic reasoning throughout His ministry. He fervently denounced the self-righteousness of the religious leaders in no uncertain terms. And during

one particular confrontation with them He said: “Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you are like whitewashed tombs which on the out side appear beautiful, but inside they are full of dead men’s bones and all uncleanness. Even so you too outwardly appear righteous to men, but inwardly you are full of hypocrisy and lawlessness” (Matthew 23:27, 28).

Throughout His ministry, Jesus strived to demonstrate how God judges the inner thoughts and motives of an individual as well as the outward behavior. He also set forth God’s supreme standards of inner moral perfection and emphasized the necessity of complying with each righteous requirement before being able to “earn” eternal life with God by doing good works. In other words, man would have to live his entire life without committing one single sin in order to attain heaven by human effort. And obviously, since God’s requirement for eternal life is absolute perfection, there is no human being who is able to merit heaven through good works since each individual has been guilty of violating many of God’s righteous standards. (The sinful nature of man, and God’s remedy for it, were discussed in the preceding chapter).

Of course, many of the Jewish religious leaders of Christ’s day acted as though they had achieved special favor by outwardly obeying the Ten Commandments and other laws which God gave to Moses on Mount Sinai. However, Jesus, in order to illustrate just how difficult it would be for any person to actually live by the supreme governing principles behind the Ten Commandments, gave His famous “sermon on the mount.” Imagine how shocked the scribes and Pharisees must have been when they heard Jesus make statements like: “You have heard the ancients were told, ‘YOU SHALL NOT COMMIT MURDER’ and ‘whoever commits murder shall be liable to the court.’ But I say to you that everyone who is angry with his brother shall be guilty before the

court; and whoever shall say to his brother, ‘Raca,’ (an insult) shall be guilty before the supreme court; and whoever shall say, ‘you fool’ shall be guilty enough to go into the fiery hell.” . . . “*You* have heard that it was said, ‘YOU SHALL NOT COMMIT ADULTERY;’ but I say to you, that everyone who looks on a woman to lust for her has committed adultery with her already in his heart” (Matthew 5:21,22,27,28).

Jesus taught many other idealistic principles concerning God’s perfect kingdom in the Sermon on the Mount; but, just His two statements about murder and adultery are certainly enough to convict most people of violating God’s laws. In His sermon, Jesus was voicing God’s concern about the inner thoughts and motives from which physical acts are conceived. For example, adulterous thoughts can lead to actually committing the physical act of adultery while anger and disrespect for others can ultimately culminate in the act of murder. Nobody could ever commit adultery without first thinking about it nor could they commit murder without first having anger or a disregard for human life because thoughts are the source of our human actions.

The only time that anger can be justified before God, is if the motive for the anger is a pure and righteous one. God Himself sometimes displayed such anger in the record of the Old Testament and, in some instances, through the life of Jesus Christ Himself. God’s righteous anger is issued against the proliferation of sinfulness which potentially could cause multitudes of people to lose their souls for all eternity. His underlying motive for such anger is a love that seeks to prevent the widespread destructiveness of evil in order to see as few people perish as possible.

This ‘pure’ anger was sometimes revealed in the life of Jesus as well.. For example, at one time, when Jesus entered the temple in Jerusalem, He became righteously indignant when He saw that the



temple resembled a thieves market. God's house of prayer was being used to conduct dishonest business transactions amid a carnival-type atmosphere. As a result of this situation, Jesus became angry and overturned the merchandise tables and drove the moneychangers completely out of the sanctuary (and yet some people question the masculinity of Jesus). As Jesus did this, He sternly proclaimed: "It is written, 'MY HOUSE SHALL BE CALLED A HOUSE OF PRAYER;' but you are making it a ROBBERS DEN" (Matthew 21:13; Mark 11:17; Luke 19:46)

Jesus was carrying out the express will of the Father when He drove the moneychangers out of the temple. His actions were directed by a holy regard for God's word which said: "...MY HOUSE WILL BE CALLED A HOUSE OF PRAYER..." (Isaiah 56:7). It is also obvious that Jesus was deeply motivated by love, since, immediately after He cleansed the temple of corruption, He began healing the lame and the blind within its walls (Matthew 21:14).

Unfortunately we sinful humans seldom display such justifiable anger. Normally our angry feelings and outbursts stem from trivial inconveniences, selfishness, assaults to our ego, or just pent up hostility. On rare occasions however, even our human anger is justified. For example, it would not be wrong for a loving father to become angry if somebody tried to assault one of his children. It would' however, become wrong if the father sustained a prolonged anger over the isolated incident because a festering anger accomplishes nothing but more harm; especially to the individual who harbors it! Therefore, God expects us to forgive the wrongs which we commit against each other, just as He (because of Jesus) forgives the wrongs we commit against Him. Unfortunately though, many of us are hesitant to heed God's instructions and then even our legitimate anger becomes sinful.

Since therefore only a small fraction of our human anger is blameless, the remainder is considered by God to be as deserving of judgment as murder, according to Christ's Sermon on the Mount. Because of this, it would require only one single instance of unrighteous anger to ruin one's chances of attaining heaven by his or her own good merits, since God requires perfection. And obviously, there has never been a grown person in the world (except Jesus Himself) who could honestly say that he, or she, has met this one standard of perfection, let alone the many other standards set forth in Christ's' sermon on the mount.

### *Inside Out*

The apostles of Christ also echoed messages of man's imperfection and unworthiness to merit the kingdom of Heaven. They made declarations such as: "For whoever keeps the whole law and yet stumbles in one point, he has become guilty of all." (James 2:10); "If we say that we have no sin, we are deceiving ourselves, and the truth is not in us." (I John 1:8); "For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God." (Romans 3:23); "But the scripture has shut up all men under sin, that the promise by faith in Jesus Christ might be given to those who believe" (Galatians 3:22).

The apostles also made it absolutely clear that salvation is not obtained by striving for human betterment. The Apostle Paul wrote: "He saved us, not on the basis of deeds which we have done in righteousness, but according to His mercy, by the washing of regeneration and renewing by the Holy Spirit, whom He poured out upon us richly through Jesus Christ our Savior" (Titus 3:5,6). Paul also said: "For by grace you have been saved through faith; and that-not of

yourselves, it is the gift of God; not as a result -of works, that no one should boast” (Ephesians 2:8,9).

Does this then mean that the apostles were not concerned about whether or not Christians endeavored to live decent, moral lives which were marked by good works? Absolute not! In fact they adamantly insisted upon Godly living among Christians; not in order to obtain salvation, but because they had *already* obtained salvation by faith in Jesus Christ. In other words, Christian works are not to be a means of salvation, but rather a *result* of salvation.

When people commit their lives to Christ, the Holy Spirit begins to encourage them to follow Christ’s example. As they heed the inner voice of the Spirit, and desire to please God, the Holy Spirit empowers them to do so. Good works become an outward demonstration of the sanctifying process of God which first begins cleansing the inside of an individual, and then proceeds outward; unlike the humanistic process of merely cleaning up the outside behavior while the inside remains corrupt.

Just as a seed, which is planted in the ground and watered, will eventually produce a mature plant; so also will a living faith in Jesus, nourished by the Holy Spirit, produce a life that is characterized by high moral and ethical standards. (The problems which Christians encounter in their service to God were mentioned in the preceding chapter).

A person who has professed to be a Christian for a considerably long period of time, and yet has never displayed any degree of moral improvement (or at least a deep *concern* for improvement) has probably never truly “believed” in Jesus since true belief would also include a reverent acceptance of Christ’s teachings and commandments. A person who sincerely believes Christ’s teachings to be true, will be concerned

about applying the principles of those teachings to his, or her, own life. And a legitimate concern (which is not hampered by doubt or unnecessary guilt) will ultimately culminate in desirable behavior through the assistance of the Holy Spirit.

This fact is reinforced in the epistle of James which says: “If a brother or sister is without clothing and in need of daily food, and one of you says to them, ‘Go in peace, be warmed and be filled,’ and yet you do not give them what is necessary for their body, what use is that?” (James 2:15, 16). In other words, James is saying; how sincere would a person be if he expressed his desire for someone to have food and clothing, and yet failed to do something about it by offering him some of his own surplus? James goes on to say in his letter: “... show me your faith without the works and *I will show you my faith by my works.*” “Faith without works is dead” (James 2:18,26).

Thus, Christian works are an outward sign of an inner saving faith in Jesus. They are an important part of Christian living but they are not to be misconstrued as some sort of “rungs” upon which a person can slowly climb the “ladder” which leads to Heaven.

Good deeds, of course, are not without their rewards. Any person, Christian or non-Christian, who practices upright living will find life much more profitable and enjoyable than a person who practices moral decadence. This is because God created man for righteousness and he therefore functions best as he approaches God’s intended purposes. However, the message of the Bible is that human righteousness, in itself, is greatly inferior to God’s *required* righteousness. And, although good works are admirable and often reflect a responsiveness to the guiding influences of the Holy Spirit, they alone are not sufficient to attain salvation. This is why it was necessary for Jesus to provide the way to Heaven for mankind.

Unfortunately, even some professing “Christians” inadvertently believe that their good deeds will merit Heaven. Some think that their weekly attendance of church services will somehow insure their attainment of Heaven, even though they live solely for themselves on the other six days of the week without any regard for, or commitment to the Lord. Still others act as though their involvement in benevolent social programs somehow deems them worthy of attaining Heaven. Although the actual deeds of such people may be admirable and right, the motives behind the deeds are misguided and dangerous because nobody can earn or merit the Kingdom of Heaven. Eternal life is a gift from God which can only be obtained by a living faith in Jesus Christ because, “there is salvation in no one else; for there is no other name under Heaven that has been given among men, by which we must be saved” (Acts 4:12).

*Never too late*

As Jesus hung upon the Cross of Calvary, he was mocked and ridiculed by many of the spectators, and even by two thieves who were crucified on each side of Him (Matthew 27:44). As death drew near, one of the thieves apparently became filled with remorse, and rebuked the other reviling criminal by saying: “Do you not even fear God, since you are under the same sentence of condemnation? And we indeed justly, for we are receiving what we deserve for our deeds; but this man has done nothing wrong” (Luke 23:40, 41). After saying this, the criminal turned to the Lord and said; “Jesus, remember me when You come in Your Kingdom.” And upon hearing his earnest plea, Jesus said: “Truly I say to you, today you shall be with me in Paradise” (Luke 23:42,43).

The repentant criminal had obviously lived a life that was deserving of capital punishment (by his own admission). Yet, in the waning

moments of his debased existence, he asked Jesus to save him. He didn't have time to go out and make amends for his past behavior; he was unable to do any good works to atone for his mistakes; it was not even possible for him to be baptized and yet, because of his *sincere* faith, Jesus said, "today you shall be with Me in Paradise."

Many people claim that it is too late for them to be saved because of their past history of corruption. Others claim to be unsalvageable because they believe they have committed "the unpardonable sin" of which the Bible speaks. Usually, such statements are nothing more than excuses to justify a continued rejection of the Christian gospel. However, in some cases, people have earnestly wanted to have restored fellowship with God through Jesus Christ, but, because they misinterpreted or misunderstood certain Bible passages, they assumed that their salvation was hopeless.

The Bible does speak of an unforgivable sin against the Holy Spirit. In order to understand what the unpardonable sin might be though, it is important to have knowledge of the ministry and mission of the Holy Spirit. According to the Gospel of John, one of the main functions of the Holy Spirit is to, "convict the world concerning righteousness, and judgment" (John 16:8); Jesus also said, of the Holy Spirit: "He *shall glorify Me* for He shall take of mine, and shall disclose it to you" (John 16:14).

Undoubtedly, the number one objective of the Holy Spirit is to lead people to salvation through Jesus. Therefore, the *continued* rejection of Jesus Christ constitutes a sin against the Holy Spirit because it is the Holy Spirit who strives to reveal the Lordship and saving role of Christ. In other words, the only sin which Christ's sacrifice will not atone for is the sin of *continued* rejection of God's plan of salvation *until finally one dies in that state of rejection*. For this there is no remedy because God

will not force anybody to receive His gift of eternal life. And, unless that person who has rejected Jesus finally accepts Him before death, he becomes hopelessly separated from God forever.

Does this then mean that a person can purposely plan to avoid a commitment to Jesus until just before death? Absolutely not! Because this reasoning itself negates the presence of any real desire or sincerity to *ever* know God. Plus, such an attitude is futile because, if He wants to, the Lord knows how to “keep the unrighteous under punishment for the day of judgment” (II Peter 2:9). Those who think they can out-smart God by plotting to reject Jesus until before death are sadly mistaken because death might come at an unexpected time. Therefore, the Bible emphatically teaches that, “...*Now* is the “ acceptable time,’ behold, now is the ‘day of salvation.’ ” (II Corinthians 6:2).

Once a person receives a full and loving revelation of God’s plan of salvation, each day of rejection becomes increasingly dangerous because the inner voice of the Holy Spirit can become ever so distant as one’s heart begins to harden and his conscience slowly becomes seared. Eventually, it might be possible for a person to become completely sealed off from the influences of the Holy Spirit and thus be prevented from being saved. But, if this thought worries you or frightens you; then cheer up, because it is not too late for *you personally*.

If there is even the slightest inclination to be saved, a vague desire, a glimmer of hope or any moral conscience at all left in a person, then the Holy Spirit has not given up on him. He is still getting through with His task to “convict the world concerning sin, and righteousness, and judgment,” and, “to glorify” Jesus. Therefore, any person who can regretfully say, “It’s too late for me to be saved,” is believing a lie because if it were really too late, there would be no regret, no guilty conscience or even a slight concern about salvation.

A person's remorse about his, or her, rejection of Christ is an important indication of the Holy Spirit's presence, but, it should be remembered that remorse alone does not qualify as true, saving repentance. (The act of repentance was mentioned in chapter eight). Judas experienced deep remorse after he betrayed Jesus, but, instead of turning to God for forgiveness with a desire to correct the errors of his life, Judas instead destroyed his own life by hanging himself. He did not wish to serve Jesus, he merely regretted betraying Him.

In contrast, the disciple Peter also experienced deep remorse after he publicly denied having any acquaintance with Jesus. But, unlike Judas, Peter did not destroy his own life. Instead, he rededicated it to the Lord Jesus and became one of the most useful, dynamic Christians in all of history. Peter may never have experienced sinless perfection after he rededicated his life to the Lord, but, he did come to realize the boundless forgiving mercy of the Lord.

The same is true of many of the Old and New Testament saints. For example, King David arranged the murder of one of his most loyal soldiers in order to conceal the fact that he had been committing adultery with the soldier's wife; and yet, King David now dwells "in the house of the Lord forever". And even Abraham, out of fear for his own life, pretended that his wife was his sister and allowed her to be taken from him by King Abimelech; knowing full well that the King would commit adultery with her. However, Abraham, in spite of such treachery, became the father of the Jewish nation, a pillar of faith, and a saint for all eternity.

And centuries later the Apostle Paul, before he was converted, persecuted the early Christian church and even participated in the murder of the first recorded Christian martyr. Nevertheless, Paul went on to become one of the most dedicated, productive Christians who ever



lived. The Lord inspired him to write thirteen of the twenty three epistles recorded in the New Testament and he journeyed thousands of miles as a missionary of the gospel for approximately thirty years.

Many modern day saints have likewise experienced the boundless forgiving grace of God. The abundant testimonies of ex-drug addicts, murderers, homosexuals, adulterers, atheists, and even those who purposely renounced Jesus in order to ceremonially worship Satan, demonstrate God's willingness to forgive any sin, and to save any person who decides to come to Him through faith in Jesus Christ. It doesn't matter how great the stain of one's sin may be, the blood of Jesus is precious enough to wash away all the sins that have ever been committed on this planet. However, Jesus cannot cleanse a person who is unwilling to come to Him for salvation.

Those who continuously refuse the grace which God offers may one day find out that it *really is too late to be saved* because when the delicate thread of mortal life unexpectedly snaps, there will be no more opportunities to receive God's free gift of eternal life. And since death is so unpredictable, it should be re-emphasized that, "*now is the acceptable time, behold, now is the day of salvation.*"

### ***The Truth:***

*"There is a way which seems right to a man, But its end is the way of death." (Proverbs 14:12)*

*"For all of us have become like one who is unclean, And all our righteous deeds are like a filthy garment; And all of us wither like a leaf, And our iniquities, like the wind, take us away."  
(Isaiah 64:6)*

*All of us like sheep have gone astray, Each of us has turned to his own way; But the LORD has caused the iniquity of us all To fall on Him.  
(Isaiah 53:6)*

*“...you are to be perfect, as your heavenly Father is perfect.” (Matthew 5:48)*

*“...as it is written, "THERE IS NONE RIGHTEOUS, NOT EVEN ONE;... For all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God.... For the wages of sin is death, but the free gift of God is eternal life in Christ Jesus our Lord.” (Romans 3:10; 3:23; 6:23)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## VIII

## MORE THAN ONE WAY ?

***The ultimate Lie: There are many religions and philosophies that lead to God***

Blaise Pascal, the famous French scientist and philosopher once said that; “There is a God-shaped vacuum in the heart of every man which only God can fill through His Son, Jesus Christ.” In other words, man has an inner spiritual need which can only be satisfied by re-establishing fellowship with the eternal God. Although some people pretend that no such need exists, others honestly acknowledge their spiritual need and, because of this, Satan has engineered the ultimate deception. He has devised a complex network of *religious deception*.

Satan is aware of man’s spiritual void, therefore he tries to fill that void with anything except the essential truths about God, or His plan of salvation. He endeavors to provide a spiritual “anesthesia” for those who feel the pains of being separated from God. And, through religious deception, Satan not only attempts to divert people from the narrow path which leads to Heaven, he also attempts to satisfy his own egocentric longing to be worshiped as God. Furthermore, although he seldom reveals his true identity as the real founder and “energizer” of various religions in the world, he nonetheless becomes the indirect recipient of the worship which is offered by many, who, mistakenly *think* they are worshiping God (or gods). (Of course, Satan would prefer to be directly worshiped as Lucifer, but, when this is not possible, he is content to disguise himself as any form of deity; even *righteous* deity if necessary.)

The Bible refers to Satan as “the god of this world” (II Corinthians 4:4), and says that he often “disguises himself as an angel of light” (II Corinthians 11:14). The scriptures also reveal that Satan possesses great supernatural power that he sometimes uses to counterfeit the very miracles of God. For example, when Moses and Aaron approached the Pharaoh of Egypt, demanding the release of the Israelites from their bondage of slavery; they performed several supernatural signs to convince Pharaoh that their request was authorized by God. However, several of the miracles that were performed through Moses and Aaron were also duplicated by Pharaoh’s own sorcerers and magicians. On one occasion, Aaron’s wooden staff was thrown to the ground and immediately was transformed into a live serpent (Exodus 7:10). When this occurred, Pharaoh summoned his sorcerers and they repeated this miracle with their own staffs. However, the serpent from Aaron’s staff devoured the other serpents that the magicians had reproduced (Exodus 7:12). This of course signified the superiority of God’s power, yet, the fact remains that Satan was able to counterfeit the miracles of God through his servants.

In the book of Job, it is also revealed that Satan, if he is not obstructed by God, has enough power to control the weather, to incite armies to battle, and to afflict the human body with disease (Job 1:2).

Satan even demonstrated his supernatural power in the presence of Jesus Himself when he tempted the Lord in the wilderness. The Bible says that Satan “led Him up and showed all the kingdoms of the world *in a moment of time*” (Luke 4:5). And, since Satan was able to manufacture such realistic phenomenon for the Lord Jesus to observe, he can certainly provide similar experiences such as astral projection, necromancy, etc..., for those who are advocates of his various religious deceptions.

Satan can make something seem absolutely real which, in actuality, is only an impression upon the mind. He can also manufacture a tangible, but counterfeit manifestation of almost anything in the world; plus, he can enter this dimension and exercise other physical forces. Through these abilities (as well as others) Satan is able to create the supernatural experiences and phenomenon that are often associated with his various religious practices.

### *The Occult*

God's word echoes numerous clear-cut warnings about supernatural phenomenon that is not of God and it also instructs people to avoid certain satanic practices which are expressly forbidden by God. And even though many who are involved in occult practices are nothing more than charlatans, whose "supernatural" manifestations and experiences amount to nothing more than clever hoaxes, there are some who definitely tap into Satanic power and thus experience phenomenon that defies any natural explanation or logical refutation. And, in either case, whether a person is serious or not, God forbids any type of dabbling with satanic practices.

For example, God's word says, "There shall not be found among you anyone who makes his son or his daughter pass through the fire, one who uses divination, one who practices witchcraft, or one who casts a spell, or a medium, or a spiritist, or one who calls up the dead. For whoever does these things is detestable to the Lord" (Deuteronomy 18:10-12); . . . "And when they say to you, 'consult the mediums and the spiritists who whisper and mutter,' should not a people consult their God? Should they consult the dead on behalf of the living? (Isaiah 8:19); ". . . Stand fast now in your spells and in your many sorceries with which you have labored from your youth; perhaps you will be able

to profit, perhaps you may cause trembling. You are wearied with your many counsels; Let now the astrologers, those who prophesy by the stars, those who predict by the new moons, stand up and save you from what will come upon you. Behold they have become like stubble, fire burns them; They cannot deliver themselves from the power of the flame” (Isaiah 47:12-14).

God often voiced His displeasure with the tools and practices of the occult during the Old Testament era and it is evident that God’s prohibition against the occult was never lifted during the New Testament era of grace. The nineteenth chapter of the book of Acts says: “Many of those who had believed kept coming, confessing and disclosing their practices. And many of those who practiced magic brought their books together and began burning them in the sight of all; and they counted up the price of them and found it fifty thousand pieces of silver. So the word of the Lord was growing mightily and ‘prevailing’ (Acts 19:18-20).

Of course many who practice the occult would argue against the inherent evil of the occultic practices mentioned in the previously quoted Bible verses - even by sometimes pointing to other scriptures which they incorrectly use to justify their involvement in the world of the occult. However, since it would require a somewhat lengthy treatise to expose the fallacies of the various arguments that they present; and to effectively reveal and document the spiritual destructiveness of occultic practices; let it simply be said that God expressly forbids many of the “religious” practices which are rapidly attracting millions of people in our society today because they do not glorify God or promote His gospel in any way.

Supernatural demonstrations of power are only used by God through His servants to verify His saving messages and to accomplish His own

healing and redeeming purposes. His people do not have to practice any sort of hidden arts; they merely make themselves available to God as vessels through whom He can accomplish His intended purposes by any means of *His own choosing*. God's supernatural power has been intended for man to satisfy God's own personal desired ends.

### *False Wonders*

Of course many people realize the spiritual dangers of delving into outright occultic practices that are expressly forbidden by God and, because of this, Satan often had to appeal to man's spiritual desires in other ways which appear to be much more righteous and in accordance with God's own character. To do this, it is obviously necessary for Satan to incorporate a great amount of truth into his seemingly "righteous" religious philosophies and systems. However, he is always careful to include enough lies, and, to omit those truths which would lead a person to the one and only eternal God. Furthermore, by promoting an air of righteousness in certain religions, he is still able to interlace them with alluring, "whitewashed" versions of the same occultic practices that are expressly forbidden by God.

Sometimes it is necessary for Satan to utilize supernatural demonstrations of power to make his erroneous religious philosophies seem valid. That is why God's word warns people to be discerning about even those "miracles" which seem to be supported by "righteousness."

Jesus issued such a warning in one of His last messages before His crucifixion. He said: "...See to it that no one misleads you. For many will come in my name, saying that 'I am the Christ' and will mislead many" . . . "And many false prophets will arise and mislead many" . . .

“For false Christs and false prophets will arise *and will show great signs and wonders*, so as to mislead, if possible, even the elect” (Matthew 24:4,5,11,24). In other words, Jesus said that Satan’s miracles would almost seem valid enough to fool God’s own people. And indeed, some of God’s own people can, and have been, deceived by false prophets; but, when this occurs, the Holy Spirit will eventually reveal such deceptions to God’s children.

The Apostle Paul likewise spoke of the Satanic power that would be displayed in the last days by Antichrist, of whom he said: “that is, the one who’s coming is in accord with the activity of Satan, with *all power and signs and false wonders*, and with all deception of wickedness for those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth so as to be saved” (II Thessalonians 2-9,10).

It is interesting to note that the terminology, which both Jesus and Paul use to describe the miracles of Satan, is the same terminology that is used in various places in the New Testament to describe the miracles of Jesus and the apostles. Apparently, the “signs and wonders” of Satan will counterfeit the very miracles and gifts of the Holy Spirit; therefore, God warns His children to scrutinize supernatural experiences and revelations. His command is to “test the spirits to see whether they are from God; because many false prophets have gone into the world” (I John 4:1). He wants all doctrine and all religious experience to be tested by the Divine authority of Holy Scripture. In other words, the complete revelation of God’s unparalleled and indestructible Word is the Divine standard by which all experience is to be judged.

The Apostle Paul praised the Bereans for testing the very gospel that he preached to them, because they compared his message with the teachings of the Holy Scriptures. He said: “Now these were more noble-minded than those in Thessalonica, for they received the word



with great eagerness, *examining the scriptures daily, to see whether these things were so*” (Acts 17:11). By examining the scriptures, the doctrines and religious experiences which are not from God can be more easily detected. For example, Cod’s word says: “If a dreamer of dreams arises among you and gives you a sign or a wonder, and the sign or the wonder comes true, concerning which he spoke to you saying, ‘*Let us go after other gods (whom you have not known) and let us serve them,*’ you shall not listen to the words of that prophet or that dreamer of dreams; for the Lord your Cod is testing you to find out if you love the Lord your God with all your heart and with all your soul” (Deuteronomy 13:1-3).

By this one single passage, the Lord makes it obvious that any teaching or supernatural experience, which can lead people away from the God of the Bible, is to be automatically rejected. And, by this passage alone, many doctrines and “religious” experiences can be immediately disqualified as having come from God. (Of course no one passage should ever be interpreted apart from its context, its culture, or apart from the combined revelations of the Old and New Testaments. However, the spiritual principle of the previous passage is one that is often repeated in the Old Testament, and carried through into the New Testament).

### *The Cults*

Another repeated message of the Bible which devastates many religious philosophies and experiences, is summed up in these few words by the Apostle John: “...and every spirit that does not confess Jesus is not from God” (I John 4:3) Now, for the person who lends any credence to what the Bible has to say, these few words could very well serve as a preventative against becoming involved in any type of religious system that does not revere the name of Jesus. Because of this,

Satan has devised some of the most diabolical religious deceptions of all. He has established many religious cults which use the name of Jesus; profess to be Christian; and outwardly appear to be righteous; yet, in reality, deny the very foundations and essential doctrines of salvation and the true Christian faith.

In almost every case, these cults use verses right out of the Bible to support their religion. Of course, the scriptures used are either twisted, used out of context, or interpreted apart from the complete revelation of the Old and New Testaments. But this should come as no surprise since Satan himself knows the Bible well and even used quotations from scripture when he tempted Christ in the wilderness.

Scriptures are often used among the cults; but, each cult's particular religious system usually differs greatly, one from another. However, although the religious doctrines and practices greatly vary among the "Christian" cults, they usually share some basic common denominators. The most recognizable of these common denominators is the adamant denial of the Christian Godhead or Trinity. (The importance and feasibility of the doctrine of the Trinity was discussed in chapter 6). By destroying the doctrine of the Trinity, Satan is able to keep people from a true knowledge of God and to lessen the significance of Christ's atonement. In the "Christian" cults, Jesus is seldom proclaimed to be the great eternal God, but rather some lesser form of deity, a prophet, a good human teacher, a divine principle, or anything else except the God of the Bible.

A Christian cult may profess some extremely sound moral principles; yet, if its concept of God is erroneous, the path of salvation can become untenable to its members who ignore the inner voice of the Holy Spirit and the Divine revelation of God in the Holy Scriptures. Some of the people in these cults really don't know or understand the

full distortions of their original church doctrines and it is quite possible that in some cases, a few may actually have a reverence and dependency upon God that exceeds the knowledge and practice of others who are members of more orthodox Christian organizations. However since Jesus said that no one can come to the Father except through Him; it is of the utmost importance to know who Jesus *really is* and to have a relationship that is utterly dependent upon Him for everything in life. He said; “I am the vine, you are the branches; He who abides in Me and I in him, he bears much fruit, for apart from Me you can do nothing.” (John 15: 5) Doctrines that distort the true nature and character of Jesus are like spiritual land mines set by the enemy on the road to salvation and they should be detected and avoided at all costs; that is why it important to reveal these blatant distortions – especially to those who may not fully understand the dangers they present.

Another common denominator among the “Christian” cults is an extreme emphasis upon doing “good works” or upon adhering to certain prescribed religious standards in order to obtain salvation. The doctrine of salvation by grace is usually distorted enough to diminish the vicarious atonement of Christ to such a degree that a cultist inadvertently believes that Christ’s sacrifice alone was not sufficient enough to pay for all sins; or to secure totally unmerited salvation. Therefore, the cultist must usually “earn” his way into heaven by his own good merits and self-sacrifices. (The impossibility of attaining heaven by good works was discussed in chapter 7). Through this distortion of the Christian gospel, the human ego is once more catered to and man is allowed to become his own savior.

Some other common denominators among “Christian” cults are: They usually claim to be the only true form of Christianity; their founders are often purported to have received some sort of special

revelation or “key” to understanding the “true” meaning of the scriptures. The cults often have their own special scriptures which they add to the Bible and esteem as good as, or *better* than the Bible. If not, they might at least change certain key words in the standard interpretations of the Bible in order to conform to their doctrinal views. And, in addition to other common denominators, the cults often deny the existence of hell plus they often deny the *bodily* resurrection of Jesus Christ.

There are, of course, many other distortions of the Christian gospel that each cult can independently claim, but, in each case, Satan insures that the basic essential doctrines, or foundations, of the Christian faith are destroyed so that God’s true plan of salvation is hindered by cultic doctrine.

### *Angels of Light*

To anyone who is familiar with the Bible, it should come as no surprise that Satan would hide under a mask of Christianity. Jesus Himself said: “Beware of the false prophets, who come to you in *sheep’s clothing*, but inwardly are ravenous wolves” (Matthew 7”15). And, since Christ’s followers are often referred to as His “sheep,” it is safe to assume that the false prophets of whom He spoke would come disguised as Christians.

The Apostle Paul wrote: “But I am afraid, lest as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness, your minds should be led astray from the simplicity and purity of devotion to Christ. For if one comes and preaches *another Jesus* whom we have not preached, or you receive a different spirit which you have not received, or a different gospel which you have not accepted, you bear *this* beautifully . . . For such men are

false apostles, deceitful workers, *disguising themselves as apostles of Christ*. And no wonder, *for even Satan disguises himself as an angel of light*. Therefore it is not surprising if his servants also disguise themselves as *servants of righteousness*, whose end shall be according to their deeds” (II Corinthians 11:3, 4, 13-15).

Paul also said: “I am amazed that you are so quickly deserting Him who called you by the grace of Christ, for a different gospel; which is really not another; only there are some who are disturbing you, and want to distort the gospel of Christ. But even though we, or an angel from heaven, should preach to you a gospel contrary to that which we have preached to you, let him be accursed” (Galatians 1:6-8).

From the revelation of God’s word, it becomes obvious that Satan can put on a false Christian mask. Because of this, the early church was somewhat plagued by cultic brands of Christianity. However, today’s generation is witnessing a veritable “cult explosion!” Although many of the members of these cultic systems are nice and well-meaning people in many ways; they have unfortunately allowed themselves to be deceived by the prince of darkness.

As a result of Satan’s deception, there are indeed many cults today which profess to be Christian but in reality are the antithesis of true Christianity. For example, it may come as a shock to some people, but the rapidly growing Mormon Church, or church of Jesus Christ of Latter Day Saints, is by no means Christian (in any historical or orthodox sense of the word). Among other things, the Mormons believe that God was once a mortal man who progressed to godhood. (*Teachings of the prophet Joseph Smith* by Joseph Fielding Smith, P. P. 345-346). They believe that God the Father still has a “body of flesh and bone as tangible as man’s” (*Doctrine and Covenants* 130:22); That our God is only one of a whole pantheon of Gods that exist (*Mormon Doctrine*, by

Bruce McConkie, P. 576-577); and that man himself can eventually obtain godhood through his own endeavors (*Mormon Doctrine* by Bruce McConkie, P. 321).

By contrast, the holy scriptures say that there is only one God (Deuteronomy 4:35; Isaiah 44:6,8); that there never were any other God's formed before, nor will there ever be any formed after the one and only God (Isaiah 43:10, 11); that God is spirit (John 4:24; Jeremiah 23:24; Psalms 139:7-10); that He is not a man (Numbers 23:19; Romans 1: 22-23; Psalms 50:21); plus it is interesting to note that the Mormon hope of attaining godhood was the same false hope that intrigued Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden (Genesis 3:4-5). It was likewise the same blind ambition which prompted Satan himself to revolt, and consequently fall from heaven (Isaiah 14-15).

Mormons further believe, that Jesus was the brother of Lucifer (*Gospel Through the Ages* by Milton R. Hunter, P. 15); that He was conceived by a physical act of sexual intercourse (*Gospel Through the Ages* by Milton R. Hunter, P. 99); that His father was none other than Adam "the first of the human family" who had since progressed to become God the Father (*Journal of Discourses, Volume I, P. 50 & 51*-as taught by Brigham Young on April 9, 1852 and later re-printed in the *L.D.S. Millennial Star No. 48, Volume XV, November 26, 1853*); and that Jesus Himself was a polygamist who had at least three wives (*Journal of Discourses Volume II, P. 82*; and *The Seer*, by Orson Pratt, P. 159), and Several Children (*Journal of Discourses, Volume II, P. 82*)

There is really no need to further contrast such perversions of the gospel with God's Holy Word. But, remember, that these perversions of scripture only represent a few of the many distorted teachings of the Mormon Church.

In spite of such twisted doctrine, young Mormon missionaries zealously propagate their religion with many extraordinary claims, most of which are false; (although they themselves are usually unaware that the claims are false). Among other things, they claim that the historical accuracy of the Book of Mormon is supported by archaeology, and even endorsed in some aspects by the Smithsonian Institution. Such claims however, could be no further from the truth.

In his book, *Mormon Claims Answered*, Marvin Cowan exposes the blatant falsehood of such claims with authoritative documentation. And, after years of investigative research, Cowan concludes that: “Thus far everything they have pointed to as “proof” has turned out to be a forgery or else an exaggerated interpretation which cannot stand up under investigation. There has never yet been one Book of Mormon name, event, place or anything else verified through archaeological discoveries!”<sup>2</sup>

Mormons also issue a challenge to prospective converts; to try to write a book of “scripture” comparable to the Book of Mormon; which will “stand forever,” without change from the very first edition, “just as the Book of Mormon has done.” Yet, it is a verifiable fact of history, that the Book of Mormon has undergone more than 4000 changes since the first 1830 edition; many of which are obvious intentional cover-ups of error.

The founder of the Mormon Church, Joseph Smith, is revered as a prophet of God; yet it should be noted that the history of his life reveals that he miserably failed every prescribed test of a true prophet; as given by God in His word (Deuteronomy 13:1-5; Deuteronomy 18:20-22; Isaiah 8:20; Isaiah 9:15-16). And the fact that Joseph Smith allegedly received the revelation of his “restored gospel” from an angel called

---

<sup>2</sup> Marvin Cowan, *Mormon Claims Answered* (Published by Marvin Cowan, Salt Lake City, Utah C 1975) P. 50

Moroni, should bring into mind Paul's words which say: “. . . though we or an angel from heaven,' should preach to you a gospel contrary to that which we have preached to you, let him be accursed” (Galatians 1:8).

Of course, it is impossible to competently, or effectively expose, within a few short pages, the mountain of lies upon which the Mormon religion is built. Several good books such as; *Mormon Claims Answered*, by Marvin Cowan; or *The Maze of Mormonism*, by Walter Martin; serve to effectively accomplish that task.

The Mormon Church has been briefly singled out in this chapter to serve as one representative example of the many churches that outwardly appear to represent Christianity, with high moral standards and wholesome family lives, but inwardly are diametrically opposed to the Christian faith. Some of those other more prominent “Christian” cults which misuse the name of Jesus are: The Jehovah's witnesses, Christian Science, World Church of God (Armstrongism), Unity School of Christianity, Unitarianism, The Church of the New Jerusalem, The Way International, The I Am, The Children of God, and The Church of the Living Word, to mention a few.

Others which *allude* to the name of Jesus, but, which are not so universally miss-associated with the true Christian faith are: The Rosicrucian Fellowship, The Unification Church, The Bahai Faith, The Theosophical Society and Spiritism, to mention a few more.

Many of the cults often seem doctrinally sound because they frequently refer to the scriptures and often use the same terminology that is associated with the Orthodox Christian Churches. Of course the scripture references of the cults are usually out of context, misinterpreted, or taken from a mistranslated passage of their own



special version of the Bible (As in the case of the Jehovah witnesses with their *New World Translation* and their *Kingdom Interlinear Translation* of the Bible).

A cultist may seem to be right in tune with basic Christian doctrine and theology, *until the cultist is pressed upon to define the Christian terms which they so frequently utter*. For example, when a cultist speaks of “God,” an effort should be made to determine what exactly is meant by the cultist when he uses the term “God;” because the cultist’s concept of God is often drastically different from the Christian concept. The same is true when terms such as “The Holy Spirit,” “Jesus,” “salvation,” “the resurrection,” hell,” etc..., are used by the cultist.

One of the quickest ways to discover a cult is to precisely determine its concept of “Jesus.” For example, the Jesus of Mormonism was, among other things, the brother of Lucifer; the Jesus of the Jehovah’s Witnesses was once the Archangel Michael; the Jesus of Christian Science was merely a man who was filled with a “Christ Principle;” the Jesus of Unitarianism was only a man, period! The Jesus of the Bahai’s was only one of nine manifestations of the “divine being” who is now manifested as Baha’ullah; the Jesus of Spiritism was a “medium of high order;” and the list of distortions goes on and on.

The Jesus of the cults is obviously not the Jesus of the Bible - the eternal God and Savior of mankind who suffered a vicarious death upon a cross; was bodily resurrected from the dead; and will come again to judge the world, and to establish His reign forever. These distorted concepts about Jesus should once again bring to remembrance the words of the Apostle Paul who warned: “For if one comes and preaches *another Jesus* whom we have not preached;... such men are false apostles, deceitful workers, disguising themselves as apostles of Christ

(II Corinthians 11:4,13). Paul's warning is especially relevant for today and Christians should take heed of it.

### *Be Prepared*

It is unfortunate; but, the average cultist has a missionary zeal that greatly surpasses that of the *average* Christian. This is why cult memberships are increasing so rapidly because people in the world are desperately yearning for spiritual fulfillment and are attracted by the enthusiasm which the cultist displays; and, which so many Christians seem to lack.

The cultist is well-indoctrinated with his own religion; is very familiar with many Bible verses; and has been *specifically trained to proselytize Christians*. Because of this, the *average* cultist can usually argue circles around the *average* Christian who has not done his spiritual homework. This is why it is important for the Christian to become familiar with what the Bible has to say, and also to learn something about the histories, and the erroneous teachings of the cults themselves. The Bible tells Christians to always be, "ready to make a defense to everyone who asks you to give an account for the hope that is in you" (I Peter 3:15). Christians are to be prepared to provide sound answers for those who question or contest the faith, just as the early apostles often did in their missionary endeavors. The Christian should not simply try to avoid contact with the members of cults, but, should instead try to reach them with the truth of the gospel, since they too are people for whom Christ died.

There are many excellent books available in Christian book stores which effectively deal with the cults. Included among these are several outstanding books written by Dr. Walter Martin, who, is an authority on

comparative religion. Among his books are three of the best reference works available entitled, *The Kingdom of the Cults* (his first textbook masterpiece), *The Rise of the Cults* (an updated handbook on the cults), and *The New Cults* (which deals with the new wave of cultism that is sweeping across the world, including some of the supposedly “non-religious’ mind sciences). These books provide a thorough and comprehensive analysis of the major cults in the world today. They are well-documented with numerous revealing, and sometimes shocking, facts that the cults would prefer to conceal if possible. That is because they reflect more than twenty years of scholarly research by a man whom the Lord has used to deliver multitudes of people from cultic and occultic oppression. It would be advantageous for every Christian to obtain copies of these informative books, not only as references for identifying and personally dealing with the cults, but, also because they effectively demonstrate how Satan can cunningly influence people to “distort the scriptures to their own destruction” (II Peter 3:16).

***UPDATE: Dr. Martin has gone home to be with the Lord since the writing of this book. There will be links to websites and Christian books and media for further study on this topic at the end of this book.***

### *The Ultimate Deception*

Now, when all of Satan’s cultic and occultic religious traps fail to keep a God-conscious person ensnared, he still has one more diabolical ploy to prevent people from realizing fellowship with the eternal God. Satan’s last strategy is to infiltrate those Christian organizations that *are* actually armed with the truth of the gospel; and to make those organizations appear to be weak, undesirable, or even treacherous if

possible. Thus, his most intensive efforts are focused upon God's own people and upon any system or organization that might be mentally associated (and sometimes incorrectly so) with God's true body of Christian believers.

One of the most effective ways to destroy any enemy is to destroy it from within its own ranks. This has been the communist stratagem that has toppled many governments; therefore, it should come as no surprise that Satan would launch similar efforts against the church. (The word "church" in the Bible does not denote any building or denomination, but refers to all people who are true believers in Christ).

One way in which he can make the church seem unappealing is to create, or gain some control of, any organization that the average non-believer *assumes* to be a true representative of Christianity. These organizations might actually profess some sound Christian doctrine and principles, but, few of their members actually *believe or apply those principles to their own lives*. Satan tries to manipulate such organizations into committing actions that are outright contradictions of their professed beliefs because the actions of such organizations often speak much louder to the non-believer than their Christian doctrines do. However, their wrong actions do not invalidate the truth of the gospel that they disgrace; nevertheless, the unbeliever often fails to recognize this fact.

Since any religious organization is comprised of fallible human beings who can sometimes be led astray, it is once again important to re-emphasize the need to test all religious experience by the authoritative standard of God's word. And God's word says that, "in the last days difficult times will come. For men will be lovers of self, lovers of money, boastful, arrogant, revilers, disobedient to parents, ungrateful, unholy, unloving, irreconcilable, malicious gossips, without self control,

brutal, haters of good, treacherous, reckless, conceited, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God; *holding to a form of godliness, although they have denied its power*” (II Timothy 3:1-5).

By considering the preceding verses in the light of other pertinent passages of scripture, it is understood that God’s warning is directed against those who make a *continuous practice* of such evil behavior, without reservation or apparent guilt; yet, profess to have “a form of godliness” by their mere association with Christianity. The verses do not mean that true Christians are incapable of ever committing such wrongs, they merely mean that Christians will not make a willful practice of such behavior, so as to become earmarked by sin instead of goodness.

Nevertheless, many who have made a willful practice of the most wicked and brutal behavior imaginable, have been incorrectly labeled as “Christian” because of their mere association with the name of Jesus. It is a sobering fact of history that many atrocities have been committed in the name of Christianity; from the small scale family abuses to the large scale inquisitions that resulted in the murder of thousands. Ironically, in many cases, the pseudo-Christians in the world have been manipulated by Satan to persecute and destroy those *who really were true believers in Christ*. When the critics recite the gory statistics of the religious crusades and inquisitions, they fail to mention that multiple thousands of the victims were people who died for their unwavering commitment to Jesus Christ Himself rather than submit to any corrupt religious system.

Although it is a fact that many atrocities have indeed been committed in the name of Jesus by pseudo-Christians, it is just as much a fact that there has been more goodness accomplished in the world by true Christians than by any other group of people. The Christian church has given to the poor, fed the hungry, clothed the naked, healed the sick,

provided comfort, and has ministered to all human needs on a scale that cannot even be approached by other religions or philanthropic organizations.

### *Fruits of Righteousness*

Though it is sometimes difficult to determine what is, and what isn't true Christianity, it is not totally impossible to do so. Once again, the guidelines for making such an evaluation are to be found in the scriptures. In order to eliminate some of the chaos and confusion about Christianity that is instigated by Satan, Jesus gave the world some instructions on how to detect his true followers. He said "Beware of false prophets, who come to you in *sheep's clothing*, but inwardly are ravenous wolves. *You will know them by their fruits*. Grapes are not gathered from thorn bushes, nor figs from thistles, are they? Even so, every good tree bears good fruit; but the bad tree bears bad fruit" (Matthew 7:15-17). As previously stated Jesus said: "I am the vine, you are the branches; he who abides in me and I in him, he bears much fruit; for apart from me you can do nothing" (John 15:5).

Anyone who abides in Christ will eventually "bear fruits" of righteousness that will be indicative of Christ's life. And, as the fruits of Christ's righteousness begin to flourish, the fruits of the sinful nature of man will begin to be choked out. (Those who are truly committed to Jesus are His witnesses; and because of this, the Holy Spirit will not allow the blatant practice of atrocities which do not represent the life of Jesus to continue for long because God does not want His true witnesses to testify against Himself).

Therefore, the fruits of God's righteousness will be manifested in His believers. They will eventually be manifested in one's morality, *and*

*they will also be manifested in one's doctrine.* Conversely, those who oppose God might be detected by their unrighteous “fruits” of moral behavior that is not representative of God; or, they might be detected by their unrighteous “fruits” of distorted *doctrine* that likewise does not represent God. In other words, a non-Christian may profess sound doctrine, yet be morally perverse, while another may be morally sound, yet doctrinally perverse. In either case, such people are opposed to God's purpose and can be detected by their “fruits.”

If Satan can't gain sufficient control of an organization to achieve a gross misrepresentation of Christ, he still tries to at least *infiltrate* those organizations that generally *do* glorify Jesus and represent Christianity; in hopes of causing their eventual deterioration. In some cases, he tries to place his often unwary servants in positions of authority within these organizations, just as one government might try to place one of its own patriots in an authoritative position of an enemy government.

Although such a statement may seem ludicrous to some, it is an undeniable fact that recent polls have revealed that thousands of pastors and seminary students now deny the basic fundamental beliefs of the Christian church and the various orthodox organizations that they supposedly represent. Many of the Christian pulpits are being filled by false prophets and some of the church pews are being populated with people who only want to hear pleasant, humanistic messages. The Bible says: “For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but wanting to have their ears tickled, they will accumulate for themselves teachers in accordance to their own desires and will turn away their ears from the truth and will turn aside to myths” (II Timothy 4:3,4).

Now if Satan can't infect a true body of believers with a denial of sound doctrine or sound morality, he'll merely play upon the human

weaknesses of many Christians and try to create dissension and divisions among the Christian body. He may try to incite trivial doctrinal disputes in order to create more “denominations” in an attempt to prevent Christ’s corporate body of believers from ever uniting on the basic essentials of Christianity that they all believe. He may try to publicize and blow out of proportion, human errors of respected Christians in order to create discouragement among their fellow brothers and sisters; he might try to make church attendance nothing more than a constant guilt trip, or reduce it to nothing more than a weekly social event. He would like to see church pews filled with expressionless, emotionless people, who resemble corpses in a morgue, or go to the opposite extreme and promote an equally undesirable frenzied-type atmosphere.

And, apart from his direct assaults upon the church itself, he will also try to utilize the various forms of communication media to discredit Christianity. Through the public Medias, Satan may try to make Christians look like wild-eyed fanatics, self-righteous hypocrites, insensitive morons, extreme pacifists, or intellectually blind people. He will especially use the media to create a false image of the Christian male since men are called by God to be influential spiritual leaders of their households. That is why Satan will try to stereotype the Christian male as a weak, milk toast, timid sort of individual and hope that few men will ever stop to think and realize that it requires more courage and manliness to go against the tide and live the Christian life, than it does to succumb to various fads, or to follow the crowd by doing what everybody else does just to be accepted by the masses.

Through any means he can, Satan tries to attack every facet of the Christian faith in some way or another. He knows that humans tend to commit the error of “guilt by association” so he especially takes advantage of this weakness. He realizes that many will condemn the



whole of Christianity by experiencing any negative which they might incorrectly associate with the true Christian faith. For example, if one “Evangelist” is shown to be a fraud, he knows that many will incorrectly conclude that all Evangelists must be frauds; and if one church can be manipulated into misappropriating funds, then many will cease to give financial support to any church; or, if a person’s “Christian” neighbors happen to be malicious and hateful, that person might inadvertently conclude that all Christians are malicious and hateful.

It may seem like Satan’s treachery knows no bounds; nevertheless, being a Christian is not as hopeless as it may now appear to some. The power and influences of God are far greater than those of Satan, and because of this fact, in the final analysis, a person’s spiritual deception will ultimately be a result of his own choice, and not because he was forced to reject God.

Even finding a right church to attend is not so difficult. God has commanded Christians to meet together (Hebrews 10:25); He therefore insures that there will always be Christian groups who preach the true gospel and are committed to serving Him. So, in spite of all the religious chaos that exists, a person will still find many Christians, Pastors, and church fellowships, who glorify Jesus with genuine enthusiasm and zeal.

Does this then mean that a person should look for the perfect church? Absolutely not, because it will never be found! Even the most spirit-filled churches might have a few people who secretly reject the Lord. To illustrate this, Jesus once told a parable which said: “The kingdom of heaven may be compared to a man who sowed good seed in his field. But while men were sleeping, his enemy came and sowed tares also among the wheat, and went away. But when the wheat sprang up and bore grain, then the tares became evident also. And the slaves of the

landowner came and said to him ‘Sir did you not sow good seed in your field? How does it have tares?’ And he said to them ‘An enemy has done this!’ And his slaves said to him, ‘Do you want us, then, to go and gather them up!’ But he said, ‘No; lest while you are gathering up the tares, you may root up the wheat with them. Allow both to grow together until the harvest; and in the time of the harvest I will say to the reapers, “First gather up the tares and bind them in bundles to burn them up; but gather the wheat into my barn.’ ” (Matthew 13:24-30)

Jesus went on to explain this parable by saying: “The one who sows the good seed is the Son of Man, and the field is the world; and as for the good seed, these are the Sons of the kingdom; and the tares are the sons of the evil one; and the enemy who sowed them is the devil, and the harvest is the end of the age; and the reapers are angels.” (Matthew 13: 37-39)

Therefore, a good church fellowship might have those who secretly and unequivocally deny Christ; but even if it doesn’t, it will still have its imperfections because all human beings are somewhat plagued by an imperfect nature that wars against godly principles. So, wherever human beings congregate, imperfections will abound.

Some say that they refuse to attend church because the churches are “full of hypocrites;” yet, this never stops these same people from attending the restaurants, grocery stores, and movie theatres that are likewise filled with hypocrites. Churches have hypocrites because hypocrites can be found wherever people gather. At least many of the sinners in churches are honest enough to acknowledge their own faults and are trying to seek the strength of God to overcome those faults. As the saying goes: “Christians aren’t perfect, they are just forgiven.” Because of this fact, people should look more to the Shepherd, and not so much to the sheep, because the sheep will sometimes go astray.

Although a perfect church will never be found, God has given His children enough common sense to determine what might be, and what might not be an *acceptable* church home. For example, if a church organization does not ascribe to the basic fundamental doctrines or beliefs of Christianity, then one can surmise that such an organization is not yet approved of God. Or, if an organization habitually neglects the reading and study of the Bible, or esteems any other book or writing as equal or superior to God's word, then this should serve as an obvious warning sign. But most importantly, Jesus Himself should be the central object of any church group because Jesus *is* Christianity. Christianity is the only religion that is built upon a personal relationship and commitment to a resurrected founder. Therefore, Jesus should be magnified and glorified in the assemblies of His believers.

Jesus said: "And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up; that whoever believes may in Him have eternal life." ... "And, if I be lifted up from the earth, I will draw all men to Myself" (John 3:14; 12:32). If Jesus is not lifted up and glorified in church services, or if a church group seems totally unconcerned about following the Master's great commission to, "preach the gospel to all creation" and "make disciples of all nations" (Mark 16:15 & Matthew 28:19), then a most essential part of Christian fellowship is lacking. It may be wise in such a case to find another church family; but, then again, God may inspire certain mature believers to join such a fellowship to become spiritual examples, and dedicated reformers of such churches or groups.

In the final analysis, it can be categorically stated that Christianity is not a religion at all, but is rather a common faith and trust in the person of Jesus Christ. A Christian's own personal relationship to the Savior is infinitely more important than his or her relationship to a particular

denomination or Christian group of people. The real church of Jesus Christ is not composed of wood, bricks and mortar; it is an invisible church that transcends denominational barriers and it is comprised of all people, regardless of any denominational labels, who love the real Jesus, and honor Him as Savior and Lord. And, of this great and mighty church triumphant, Jesus said; “The gates of hell shall not prevail against it” (Matthew 16:18 KJV).

### ***The Truth:***

*Jesus said to him, "I am the way, and the truth, and the life; no one comes to the Father but through Me." (John 14:6)*

*"Beware of the false prophets, who come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly are ravenous wolves." (Matthew 7:15)*

*"Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' will enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father who is in heaven will enter." (Matthew 7:21)*

*"And there is salvation in no one else; for there is no other name under heaven that has been given among men by which we must be saved." (Acts 4:12)*

*"I am amazed that you are so quickly deserting Him who called you by the grace of Christ, for a different gospel; which is really not another; only there are some who are disturbing you and want to distort the gospel of Christ. But even if we, or an angel from heaven, should preach to you a gospel contrary to what we have preached to you, he is to be accursed! As we have said before, so I say again now, if any man is preaching to you a gospel contrary to what you received, he is to be accursed! For am I now seeking the favor of men, or of God? Or am I*

*striving to please men? If I were still trying to please men, I would not be a bond-servant of Christ.” (Galatians 1: 6-10 Words of the Apostle Paul))*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## PART II

# The Bible & Science

*“For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes, His eternal power and divine nature, have been clearly seen, being understood through what has been made, so that they are without excuse. For even though they knew God, they did not honor Him as God or give thanks, but they became futile in their speculations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing to be wise, they became fools.” (Romans 1: 20-22)*

### INTRODUCTION

More scientific achievements have been made during this past century than in the entire previous history of mankind. Within this relatively short period of time, the world has been translated from an age of horse-drawn carriages into a new era of rocket-powered space flight and this quantum leap seems almost "miraculous." Therefore, because of the many spectacular accomplishments that have been realized in recent years, many people have allowed their “faith” to shift from God to science and, in effect, science has become the “sacred cow” of humanity.

When life-threatening problems arise, or when answers to life’s mysteries are sought, most people seem to rely upon science alone for solutions rather than upon the creator of the universe. This is an extremely unfortunate situation because modern science is far from being infallible. Granted, many wonderful things have been accomplished through science but what most people fail to remember is that the entire scientific approach is an ongoing process of trial and error.

This means that the vast majority of scientific theories often prove to be erroneous once they are sufficiently tested. This is why some scientists have had to endure thousands of experimental failures before accomplishing any measure of success. And remember, each of those failures occurred as a result of the practical application of theories that once seemed logical and probable, but, which ultimately proved to be incorrect.

Proof of this prolific failure syndrome is established in the fact that there are literally thousands of science books that are now obsolete because they contain information that has been proven to be incomplete or totally false.

Many theories of the past now seem totally ridiculous in our present age. However, these same theories were once regarded as “fact” by multitudes of people. Modern science is still subject to the same problem of error that has existed in the past; nevertheless, the average person nowadays will accept practically any new theory by faith because science has become so technical that few people have the time or the education to challenge the myriad of ideas that are constantly being proposed.

The purpose of this book is to reveal some of the modern fallacies that are being foisted upon humanity in the name of science - especially in those areas that concern the origin of mankind. Many of the facts presented will be startling yet easy to understand; therefore, it will not require great scholarship to comprehend the simple logic and truth that is brought forth in the following pages. However, it will require enough honesty to admit that the popular *theory* of evolution could be wrong.

## I

## NO SCIENTIFIC VALIDITY?

*The Lie: The Bible is scientifically incorrect*

Because the *theory* of evolution and several other modern scientific views, many people believe that the Bible has no scientific validity. These people accept the opinions of certain scientists solely on faith while they willfully reject the testimony of the book that has endured for ages.\* The Bible was certainly never intended to be a science book, but that does not mean that it is scientifically incorrect. In fact, some of the major break-throughs in science could have been attained much sooner if scientists had only realized the significance of certain statements made in the Bible. There are numerous scientific truths that were written into scripture long before they were ever officially discovered. Some of these truths will be briefly considered before addressing the conflict between scripture and evolution.

Since the dawn of history, people have had many erroneous concepts about the shape and structure of our planet. Some thought it was flat, some thought it was square, others believed that it was supported by pillars. Positive proof of the earth's roundness was not established until the early 1500's by Ferdinand Magellan. However, the oldest book in the Bible contains an interesting statement concerning the earth. In the seventh verse of the twenty-sixth chapter of Job, the Bible says concerning God: "He stretches the north over empty space, and *hangs the earth on nothing.*" Can modern science say much more than

---

\* For a study on how the scriptures have survived a barrage of intellectual attacks throughout history please refer to Part I of this book.



that our earth “hangs upon nothing.” Sure, the force of gravity is said to account for the earth’s position in the universe but that doesn’t really explain anything because scientists don’t even know what gravity is. All they can do is observe and measure the phenomenon that occurs as a result of the unknown force of gravity.

An additional description of the earth is found in the fourteenth chapter of Isaiah in which the prophet says of God: “It is He that sits upon the circle of the earth.” (The Hebrew word for “circle” in the text can also be translated “sphere;”<sup>1</sup>) therefore, by considering this verse in Isaiah along with the previously mentioned verse in Job, a person could visualize a round earth suspended in space. This is especially remarkable when one realizes that both Job and Isaiah lived more than 2500 years ago.

### *Astronomy*

Long ago, astronomers would spend endless hours trying to count and identify the stars. In fact, before the invention of the telescope, several astronomers had arrived at what they considered to be the total numbers of stars.<sup>2</sup> They did this in spite of the fact that two thousand years before the invention of the telescope, the prophet Jeremiah stated that the stars of heaven could not be numbered. Of course, with modern technology, we now know that there are billions of stars in our own galaxy and possibly billions of other galaxies like our own. We now see that Jeremiah was right - the stars of heaven can’t be numbered.

While on the subject of astronomy, it should be mentioned that critics sometimes refer to verses in the Bible that portray the sun moving across the sky as evidence of the unscientific nature of the Bible. One example of this type of verse is found in the first chapter of Ecclesiastes and another is found in the nineteenth Psalm where David speaks of the sun as traveling from “one end of heaven to the other.” However, what

the critics don't like to consider is the fact that most of us in this modern advanced age *still* speak of the sun in similar terms because of simplicity and because this is how the sun is observed from our natural view-point. It is much easier to measure the movements of the sun, stars, and planets by assuming the earth to be the central point around which they travel and it is from this very viewpoint that modern astronomy charts courses and positions of the heavenly bodies.<sup>3</sup>

Besides, statements about the sun moving from one end of heaven to the other don't seem so unscientific anymore because most astronomers now believe that our entire solar system is racing through space at a tremendous speed. In all honesty the Biblical writers were probably not thinking of this phenomenon when they wrote such statements about the sun's movement. However, if the critics want to be exceedingly technical, the Bible student can be likewise.

The most probable reason for such statements in the Bible about the sun is that people of ancient times were absolutely convinced that the sun indeed traveled from one end of the earth to the other. And, since the Bible was primarily written to communicate with average people about man's spiritual condition rather than his intellectual state, it would be easier to speak to humanity in terms that were understandable. The Hebrews probably had enough difficulty understanding many futuristic statements made by their prophets. But, could you imagine their reaction if the Lord had inspired the Psalmist to write something to the effect that: "The sun remained still while the spherical earth rotated on its axis." Such a statement would seem ridiculous to ancient people and it certainly wouldn't be very poetic.

### *Meteorology*

The science of meteorology is relatively new. Throughout history people have observed the weather with little understanding of its

behavior. However, some of the most basic facts of meteorology were stated in the Bible long before they were officially discovered. Consider the water cycle for example: We know that water is precipitated and falls to the ground as rain, snow, hail, etc; this water is then returned to the oceans through a system of rivers, where it evaporates, forms clouds, and is carried off by the wind to be precipitated over land again. We also know that there are major wind currents involved which travel in definite circuits around the world.

These basic facts were stated in the Bible long before they were understood. For example, in the thirty-sixth chapter of the book of Job, verses twenty-seven and twenty-eight say: “For He draws up the drops of water, they distill rain from the mist, which clouds pour down they drip on man abundantly.” These verses accurately summarize the process of evaporation, condensation and precipitation.

Now consider the words of King Solomon that are found in the sixth and seventh verses of the first chapter of Ecclesiastes: “The wind goeth toward the south and turneth about unto the north; it whirleth about continually and the wind returneth again according to his circuits. All the rivers run into the sea yet the sea is not full. Unto the place from whence the rivers come, thither they return again.” (KJV)

These two books of the Bible contain a simplified, yet accurate description of the complete water cycle and our great wind currents. Isn't it remarkable that this information was contained in scripture thousands of years before it was scientifically discovered?

### *Health, Diet and Agriculture*

The books of Moses contain many instructions pertaining to diet, agriculture, medicine and sanitation. These instructions were extremely advanced for their time and their significance has only recently been discovered.

For example, the Israelites were instructed to let their farm lands remain idle every seventh year in spite of their food demands. It was not until thousands of years later that man “discovered” that the lands needs a complete rest every seven years even if crops are rotated.<sup>4</sup> If this is not done, the ground begins to wear out, crops become poor, and the land eventually becomes useless.

The Jews also received many instructive warnings against eating certain foods. These prohibited foods were consumed by neighboring nations, yet the Israelites avoided them because of God’s warnings. We now know from modern science that the forbidden foods are those that are most likely to cause sickness, disease, or parasitic infection, while the foods that the Israelites *were* permitted to eat are considered to be among the safest for human consumption.<sup>5</sup> Other dietary regulations included abstinence from eating any animal that had died a natural death; plus, they were also forbidden to drink stagnate water or any other water that had been contaminated by dead animals or meat of any kind. These and other dietary regulations were thousands of years ahead of their time.

The bubonic plague has been responsible for killing millions of people at different periods throughout history. The “Black Death” took so great a toll because people in the past centuries had no practice of isolation or sanitation in dealing with the disease. The Bible contains some instructions that would have prevented such tragedy if only people had realized the importance of these instructions. Consider these statements that are found in the fifteenth chapter of Leviticus, verses two through five: “Speak to the sons of Israel, and say to them, ‘When any man has a discharge (pus) from his body, his discharge is unclean. This, moreover shall be his uncleanness in his discharge: It is his uncleanness whether his body allows its discharge to flow, or whether his body obstructs its discharge. Every bed on which the person with the

discharge lies becomes unclean, and everything on which he sits becomes unclean. Anyone, moreover who touches his bed shall wash his clothes and bathe in water...’ People of the past had no knowledge of germs or any practice of this type of sanitation or isolation (except for the Jews) until certain discoveries were made by Joseph Lister some 3400 years after the book of Leviticus was written.<sup>6</sup>

Another tragic killer was a disease known as “childbed fever.” Many mothers died from this disease up until the late 1800’s because doctors would go directly from anatomy classes in the morgue, right to the delivery room without ever washing the hands that had just touched dead bodies.<sup>7</sup> Once again, the Bible contains several ceremonial instructions that involved a ritual of washing and purification whenever a dead body was touched. This practice would have saved the lives of thousands of women.

There are many other instances in which the Bible records information that was not scientifically discovered until thousands of years after it was written. The examples of this phenomenon are so plentiful and so significant that it would take an entire book to cover them all.

### *Who’s Who*

Some of the greatest scientists of all time have been Christians who believed the Bible to be the inspired word of God. Among these great scientists are men like Lord Kelvin, Louis Pasteur, Michael Faraday, Kepler, Lister, Herschel, Maxwell, Galileo, and the most famous scientist of all, Sir Isaac Newton.<sup>8</sup>

Unfortunately, this past century has experienced a drastic change in the attitude of the scientific community toward the Bible. Now the majority of scientists have rejected the testimony of the Bible concerning the earth’s origin and development. This disagreement with

the Biblical record has been the result of a popular acceptance of the theory of evolution. However, although the majority of scientists reject the Biblical creation account, there are still many scientists today who strongly support it with a wealth of convincing evidence. Today there are literally thousands of scientists with advanced degrees who are members of scientific organizations that accept the Biblical record of special creation. Some of these men call themselves “creationists” and their numbers are increasing rapidly. Nevertheless, in spite of the fact that these people are bona fide scientists in every sense of the word, they have recently been labeled as anything but scientists because of their dissatisfaction with the status quo of evolutionary thought.

This is a tragic situation but not a surprising one because history reveals that any divergence from the mainstream of scientific thought often results in ridicule. Some of History’s most significant scientific breakthroughs were discovered by people who were scoffed at by the overwhelming majority of their contemporaries. This is not to say that every alternate theory that is met with criticism from the mainstream may be valid; but, only to say that opposition from the mainstream is never a true gauge.

The *theory* of evolution has been so deeply engrained into the minds of the masses during the past few decades that most people now attain to its general precepts without question. Any divergence from the basic tenants of evolution is usually met with a fury of scornful debate because too many careers, programs and egos are now at stake.

Ever since the theory of “spontaneous generation” was disproved by Louis Pasteur, evolutionists have been grasping at intellectual “straws” because spontaneous generation (The idea that life could spring forth from non-life) was the very *foundation* of the theory of evolution. The collapse of this foundation and the continuous barrage of evidence that defies evolution has only caused the evolutionists to “dig in deeper”

because they would prefer to fight to the death than acknowledge that man is more than a “higher animal.”

To most people, the literal Biblical account of special creation is almost laughable. For this reason, this very “laughable” viewpoint will be expounded to show that there is *far more scientific evidence in favor of even this extreme, biblical viewpoint than there is to support the theory of evolution!* It is understood, of course, that many dedicated Christians and Jews are in disagreement with this literal creationist theory but that disagreement should not become a hindrance to taking a curious look at some of the evidence in favor of it. However, before taking a look at some of that evidence, it is first necessary to recap the theory of evolution and then summarize the theory of special creation.

### *Evolution*

Modern evolutionists believe that the earth is several billion years old. There are differing theories about the origin of the universe but in each case there is no provision or necessity for a God or planner behind its existence. One of these theories is known as the “big bang theory” which states that an explosion occurred in space and somehow converted energy into matter and formed the heavenly bodies of the universe. According to this theory, the universe is still expanding from this explosion. Another theory known as the nebular theory claims that large masses of gas and dust coalesced to form the planets and stars. This theory infers that this process is still continuing today although it has never been observed.

Regardless of differing views about the origin of the universe, most evolutionists agree that about two billion years ago, (or longer) the earth cooled off enough for life to be generated from non-living matter by some sort of random combination of proper elements under ideal circumstances which caused the first living cell to be formed. This

living cell later divided and one-half became the first ancestor of the plant kingdom while the other half gave rise to the animal kingdom.

After more than a billion years or so of mutation and chance variation, evolution had produced small insect-like sea animals such as trilobites. Then, after another one hundred seventy million years, these insect-like creatures gave rise to various types of fish. The fish developed into amphibians during the next thirty million years or so and the amphibians evolved into reptiles after about another hundred million years. The evolutionist believes that reptiles gave rise to one line that lead to birds and another line that lead to mammals. The first birds and mammals were allegedly developed about one hundred eighty million years ago and this uphill progression of change continued until man finally evolved from a common ancestor of the ape about one to two million years ago.

The evolutionist believes in the “doctrine of uniformitarianism” which, in a nutshell states that physical process occur at the same rate now as they have in the past. The uniformitarian believes that mountain ranges, canyons, delta formations, fossils, sedimentation, etc... can all be explained by the slow processes which we observe today—having occurred at the same rate throughout history. He believes that “the present is the key to the past.” Until recently the evolutionist did not believe that there had ever been any major catastrophic events with proportions greater than the local catastrophes that are observed in the present. The evidence now states otherwise and that is why new “adjustments” in the theory have transpired. Nevertheless, the concept of a worldwide flood such as the one mentioned in the Bible still seems ridiculous to the evolutionist.

In summary, the evolutionist believes that our present world environment is the result of a process that has transformed random particles of matter into the great planets and stars of the universe. Our



planet somehow generated the first “simple” form of life from non-living materials and then this life-form managed to reproduce itself and slowly change from simpler forms of life into more complex systems. The classic evolutionist believes that these processes are continuing today although they are too slow for man to observe. The main support for this theory is claimed to be found in the fossil record of the geological column. (This evidence will be dealt with later in this section).

### *Special Creation*

The Biblical theory of special creation is radically opposed to the theory of evolution because the creationist believes in a relatively young earth that is probably no more than six to twenty five thousand years old (opinions vary). He also believes that the earth and all of the heavenly bodies are the finished result of special creative processes that are no longer taking place today.

The earth and all of its life-forms (including man) are also believed to have been initially created in a completely mature state. In other words, plants, animals and man himself were created as “full-grown” and would have had the appearance of being fully developed even when they were only minutes old. Furthermore, these special creative acts are believed to have taken place during a period of six literal days by an Omnipotent Creator. After the six day period ended, special creation was ceased and the world was left to operate under its own built-in laws and systems for preservation, conservation, and reproduction of life which are being sustained by God’s own life-giving power to this very day.

The creationist believes that all life systems have built-in mechanisms that allow for change and variation in order to increase chances of survival in adverse conditions. However, these changes are

believed to be made within restricted limits and can never result in producing a different “kind” or type of organism. There are several places in the first chapter of Genesis where both plants and animals were commanded by God to bring forth after their “own *kind*.” In other words, if variation occurred it could never have transcended the divine limits that separate one kind from another kind. For example, the creationist believes that a white moth may eventually produce a grey moth, but will never *evolve* into anything but a moth.

The creationist also believes that our present environment is quite different from the earth’s original environment. Some believe that the earth was once surrounded by a translucent canopy of water vapor in the stratosphere that would have filtered out harmful radiation and created a worldwide uniform tropical climate. Such a condition would create a “green house” effect around the entire earth and would promote the general health and longevity of all living things. A canopy of water would have also inhibited any changes or variations in weather conditions since the sun’s heat would have been evenly distributed around the earth.

***UPDATE: From the time of writing this section about the creationist theory in regards to a canopy of water vapor existing above the earth; this author’s view concerning this idea has since changed due to problems that have since been identified in the testing and analysis of this theory. Some creation scientists still support this idea but others have since rejected it. The concept of a vapor canopy still has some validity, but it could not have contained the massive amounts of water previously postulated because of the heat retention involved. The supporting comments relative to this aspect of the strict literal creationist theory have been left unedited in this book because the problems encountered with the canopy theory after further analysis are still not as insurmountable as the***

*myriad problems that face so many aspects of the theory of evolution - yet still go unchallenged in our educational systems! Reference will be made in the next "UPDATE" to a more logical explanation and accounting of where most of the water for a universal flood came from and why there is evidence of a previous uniformity in climate on the great land masses. Much can be explained by focusing upon the pre-flood "subterranean waters" (which were mentioned before the next update but not in great depth) and how their sudden release can account for and explain the great flood and its impact upon life and geology.*

The creationist believes that this canopy of water vapor, in conjunction *with vast oceans of subterranean waters*, was instrumental in providing the necessary amount of water to cause the universal flood that is recorded in the book of Genesis. It is believed that God caused a catastrophic upheaval in nature that opened up the great "Fountains of the Deep" (subterranean waters) and caused the canopy to precipitate and fall to the earth. The end result of this catastrophic event was that the entire earth was covered with water and all terrestrial life was destroyed (with the exception of those who escaped judgment by entering Noah's Ark).

It is believed that before the great flood occurred, the highest mountains on earth were probably less than seven thousand feet and the ocean basins were much shallower than they are today. The great pressures and forces of the flood waters caused the earth's crust to undergo some massive changes and resulted in forming many of the current characteristics of our great mountain ranges, canyons, and ocean depths. There were also other physical changes made upon the earth's crust as God caused the flood waters to recede.

After the Noahic flood, the climate was no longer uniform and the longevity of living systems began to decrease. This was possibly due to increases of harmful radiation that had previously been filtered out by

the canopy and also due to other environmental changes produced by the flood. Although this speculation about a water canopy and a universal flood probably sounds a little unbelievable to some people, the creationist has several good reasons to believe that such conditions actually did exist. There are many scientific reasons for this theory and there is also the testimony of certain unique Bible verses that tie into the scientific evidence and lend credence to this theory.

### *Noah's Ark*

The concept of a universal flood is pivotal to the theory of special creation. Therefore, before considering any of the supportive evidence, it is first important to dispel any erroneous assumptions concerning Noah and his ark. The book of Genesis contains an interesting story about this man named Noah, who lived more than four thousand years ago. He lived in a world that had become so corrupt and degenerate that God finally decided to destroy every living thing upon the earth by causing a global flood.

Noah was unlike the rest of the people in the world, so God offered him and his family a means of escape from this great judgment that was to come upon the earth. God told Noah to build an ark (or a great ship) according to His specific instructions and details. This vessel was to be used for preserving Noah, his family, and at least two of every kind of animal upon the earth. It may have taken Noah and his family nearly 100 years to build this great ship, and once the flooding began a period of one year elapsed until the land was finally dry again. The result of this holocaust was the destruction of all terrestrial life except the lives of those who found safety within the ark.

This Biblical account of Noah and the flood has received more criticism and ridicule than any other record of the scriptures. Much of this criticism has resulted from numerous misconceptions about the ark

and its carrying capabilities. The Bible says that the ark was three hundred cubits long, fifty cubits wide and thirty cubits high. So what's a cubit? A cubit was the distance from a man's elbow to his finger tip. Obviously, the cubit would vary between individuals; this is why the ancient Hebrews established two standard measurements for the cubit. The shortest measurement was 17.5 inches and the longest measurement was 22.5 inches.<sup>9</sup>

By converting the shortest measurement of 17.5 inches to feet, the size of the ark is calculated to be approximately 440 feet long, 70 feet wide and 40 feet high. This means that the ark was almost one and one-half times the length of a football field, even if the shortest measurement for a cubit is considered. Its height included three separate decks and it was designed to withstand extremely turbulent conditions without capsizing.

The obvious question is: "Could the ark possibly have been large enough to carry two of every kind of species on earth?" According to some of the world's leading authorities in animal classification, there are over one million species of animals on earth today.<sup>10</sup> However, most of these animals are sea creatures and would obviously not have been required to enter the ark since God's judgment was a water cataclysm. Many sea creatures did indeed perish during the flood from rapid sediment burial but many others would have survived destruction. The Bible states that, "Everything that was on the dry land was destroyed" but it makes no mention of all sea life being destroyed too. Therefore, Noah's only concern would have been for the dry land animals and possibly the amphibians.

Since there are only about 17,500 species that fit into these "dry land" categories, Noah might have needed enough room for 35,000 animals since he was to take two of each kind.<sup>11</sup> The average size of

these 17,500 species has been estimated to be approximately the size of a sheep.<sup>12</sup>

In order to understand the logistics involved, consider that one standard railroad stock car can hold approximately 240 sheep. This means that it would take about 146 railroad stock cars to accommodate 35,000 sheep. However, there are also about 850,000 species of insects which need to be considered.<sup>13</sup> Therefore, it would have been necessary to take at least two of each kind of insect which gives a total of 1,700,000 insects. How much space would the insects need? Consider once again the size of a stock car. The average stock car has a carrying capacity of 2,670 cubic feet. This means that there is more than 4,600,000 cubic inches of space in each car. Therefore, twenty box cars would provide more than 50 cubic inches of space for each individual insect. Thus, it is reasonable to assume that the 35,000 animals and 1,700,000 insects could be carried in the space provided by 166 railroad cars.

So what do railroad cars have to do with Noah's Ark? Consider this: Even by using the smallest measurement for a cubit, it can be determined that the ark had the same cargo capacity as **522** standard railroad stock cars.<sup>14</sup> This would have been more than enough room to accommodate the animals and insects.

### *The Great Round Up*

There are also some ridiculous misconceptions regarding the method in which the animals were gathered and cared for. Many people picture Noah as running madly about the earth trying to corral two of every type of specie. This assumption is quite contrary to the Biblical record because the Bible states in Genesis chapter six, verse twenty: "Of the birds after their kind, and of the animals after their kind, and of every

creeping thing of the ground after its kind, two of every kind *shall come to you to keep them alive.*”

Noah didn't have to round up the animals because the animals came to him. It may have been at this particular time that God instilled within certain animals, the mysterious instinct of migration. To this very day, animals migrate in order to escape unfavorable future conditions and in many cases this instinct seems to be almost a supernatural phenomenon that nobody really understands. (Remember, they wouldn't have had to migrate great distances because the uniform climate of the pre-flood world would have allowed all species to inhabit any and all parts of the world).

Noah didn't have to worry about ferocious animals either because “In the beginning” man was made to have complete dominion over the animals. (Genesis 1:28). It wasn't until after the flood that man's relationship with the animals was changed. God warned Noah shortly after leaving the ark that the animals would now be afraid of him (Genesis 9:2) and that the possibility of being killed by an animal was present (Genesis 9:5).

Another question that is often raised by critics is: “How could Noah and his family have possibly taken care of that many animals?” There are many zoos in our country that require large crews to maintain proper care and feeding of far fewer animals than Noah had to contend with, but, the answer to this problem may be found by considering yet another animal instinct that can be observed today. This animal instinct is hibernation.

The first verse of the eighth chapter of Genesis begins: “And God remembered Noah, and every living thing, and all the cattle that were with him in the ark.” Now, it is obvious that the Omnipotent, Omniscient, Omnipresent God of the Bible would be incapable of “forgetting” those whom he had lead to safety within the ark. Therefore,

it is quite possible that this word “remembered,” refers to some type of divine assistance with Noah’s problem. Hibernation would definitely be a feasible solution because animals neither eat, drink, nor eliminate body wastes when they are hibernating. Hibernation presently occurs among mammals, reptiles, amphibians, and at least one type of bird.<sup>15</sup>

Therefore, since this miraculous phenomenon is observed among all types of animals in our present age, it is not presumptuous to assume that an all powerful God could have instilled it within the animals of Noah’s ark.

The concept of a universal flood is one of the most important aspects of the theory of special creation. It is for this reason, that some of the more frequently asked questions concerning the Biblical account of Noah’s ark needed to be given some consideration before expounding any other areas of the creationist theory.

### *The Flood*

In the first chapter of Genesis, verses six through eight read, “Let there be an expanse in the midst of the waters and let it separate the waters from the waters. And God made the expanse and separated the waters which were below the expanse from the waters which were *above* the expanse and it was so, and God called the expanse heaven...”

(Sometimes the word “heaven” merely refers to our atmosphere as it does in this case). Those who believe that this verse is simply referring to the clouds that are formed in our troposphere encounter some difficulties with science and with several other verses in the Bible. One of the scientific difficulties is: If all the moisture in our present atmosphere was precipitated all at once, it would only provide enough water to cover the earth to a depth of two inches.<sup>16</sup> This would certainly not be enough to cover the highest mountains and totally destroy all terrestrial life.



To understand what the Bible could be referring to in regards to “waters which were above the heavens,” let us consider the structure of our atmosphere. Our current atmosphere extends upward for a distance of about 300 miles. It is composed of three zones or layers which are known as the troposphere, the stratosphere, and the ionosphere. The troposphere contains the air we breathe and it extends upward from the earth to a maximum distance of about ten miles. The temperatures in the upper regions range from minus 50° to minus 100° Fahrenheit. A plane can usually escape adverse weather conditions by flying above this layer and within the second layer called the stratosphere. The stratosphere extends upward for about 50 miles and it is this layer that contains our ozone belt. The temperatures above and below the ozone belt are sub-zero, but the ozone area has a temperature of plus 30 degrees Fahrenheit. Some creationists believe that this level once contained a canopy of water vapor because temperatures and conditions would have been compatible for its maintenance. The canopy would have held additional heat and thus increased the temperature at this level. This canopy and, to a greater extent, the vast quantities of subterranean water would have effectively supplied the necessary amount of water needed for a universal flood.<sup>17</sup>

It was mentioned previously that this canopy would have inhibited any variation in weather. This is because the heat from the sun would have been evenly distributed around the earth to cause a uniform tropical-type climate. There is plentiful evidence within the fossil record that such a worldwide tropical climate actually existed. Fossils of tropical plants and animals have been discovered in the Polar Regions beneath the ice and various rocks from all of the supposed geological “ages” contain fossils that testify of a worldwide warm climate.<sup>18</sup> Furthermore, in some of the frozen wastelands of the world, huge animal graveyards have been uncovered and many of these animals have been

preserved completely intact with the hair and skin still on their bodies. What's really interesting is that, in several cases, the animals still had tropical plants in their mouths and stomach.<sup>19</sup> (This phenomenon will be elaborated on in a later section.)

Another discovery was made in Alaska that uncovered wolves, bears, sheep, horses, bison, a wolverine, a fox, a mammoth, a saber-toothed tiger, a moose, a camel, a yak, a mastodon, and several other various species within the same frozen area.<sup>20</sup> Now what would a camel and some of these other animals be doing in Alaska if the climate in time-past was not drastically different?

The only explanation offered by the evolutionist for this type of phenomenon is to say that continents from warmer zones must have drifted to the Polar Regions. However, this theory is not nearly sufficient to account for the prolific and worldwide distribution of the warm climate fossil record. It further violates the doctrine of uniformitarianism because the forces that would be required to achieve continental drift would be of catastrophic proportions that are not present in today's world. Ironically the only recorded event that could sufficiently explain the "possibility" of continental drift would be the universal Noahic flood.<sup>21</sup>

In addition to the physical evidence, there are also several Biblical reasons for believing that weather conditions before the flood were much different than conditions after the flood. The second chapter of Genesis states that, "It did not rain upon the earth... but there was a mist that went up from the earth and watered the whole face of the ground." Such an occurrence would indicate that atmospheric conditions upon the earth were probably different and it lends further support to the canopy theory.

The seventh verse of the eleventh chapter of Hebrews also states that Noah was warned about things "Not yet seen." That which had "not

yet been seen” was possibly rain. We find further indication of this in Genesis chapter nine, where Noah apparently sees the first rainbow. Furthermore, the first mention of any type of climactic variation is not mentioned until the eighth chapter of Genesis which is after Noah and his family disembarked from the ark. At this time God said, “While the earth remains, seed time and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease.”

Another indirect Biblical reason for believing that a canopy of water vapor may have existed can be found in the recorded ages of people who lived before the flood as opposed to those who lived after the flood. The Bible records some life-spans, of men who lived before the flood, that seem quite improbable when compared to modern life spans. For example, Adam lived 930 years. Seth lived 912 years, Enosh lived 905 years, and Methuselah lived to be 969. However, after the flood there is a marked, progressive decline in longevity with each successive generation. This could possibly have been due, in part, to the increasing amount of radiation that penetrated the atmosphere as climactic conditions re-adjusted within the new environment. Today, a relatively small amount of water vapor and ozone in our atmosphere serve as a protective screen against the lethal amounts of cosmic, ultra violet, and X-radiation that would otherwise destroy all life. Some of this radiation still penetrates this protective screen and has been empirically proven to be detrimental to our health. This excess radiation, along with other factors, apparently began to take its toll on human vitality after the flood; whereas, before the flood, a heavy canopy of water vapor may have filtered out the excess radiation, enhanced the general climate and served to promote the health and longevity of plants, animals and man himself.

It is also interesting to note that man was never told to eat meat until after the flood. This could possibly indicate that the nutritional

value of plants was superior before the flood, due to the greenhouse and filtering effect provided by the canopy. Apparently the quality, and obviously the quantity, of plant life after the flood was diminished enough to require an alternative food source.

As the flood gates opened, the structure of the earth's crust underwent massive changes. The tremendous and prolonged weight of the water upon the earth's crust would have caused widespread faulting. Plus, the volcanic activity and release of the great chambers of subterranean waters would have caused many tidal waves and left the waters in a state of continuous agitation. Erosion would have carved and re-shaped the earth's surface entirely and many living creatures would have been rapidly buried by the sediments in the beginning stages of the flood. The more mobile creatures would have tried to escape to higher ground until they too were either washed away or buried by sediments.

The seventh chapter of Genesis states that after 150 days God caused the "Windows" and "Fountains" to stop. The agitation of the waters would have eventually stopped and the remaining suspended sediments would rapidly begin to settle. After the water flow stopped, the earth's crust began to uplift in some places and depress in others. This uplifting allowed the waters to recede to the deeper ocean channels and, what had probably been a 50/50 ratio of land to water had rather suddenly become our present day ratio of only 30% land to about 70% water.

***UPDATE: The following three paragraphs were added to this work after attending a public debate at Arizona State University in the mid 1980's between Dr. Walter Brown and Dr. Robert S Dietz, a world renowned and highly acclaimed geologist. The debate was a real eye opener and some of the initial laughter from students turned into silence as Dr Brown scientifically defended his "Hydroplate" theory and provided overwhelming evidence for a***

*young earth and special creation. Dr Brown was a former evolutionist for most of his life but after years of study, he became convinced of the scientific validity for a global flood and special creation. Dr. Brown received his Ph.D. from M.I.T. where he was a National Science Foundation Fellow. He spent 21 years in the Military where his duties included: “Director of Benet Research, Development, and Engineering Laboratories, in Albany, New York; tenured associate professor at the U.S. Air Force Academy; and chief of Science and Technology Studies at the Air War College.” There will be links at the end of this book to Dr Brown’s book “In the Beginning” and to many explanatory facts and illustrations he has provided for further research.*

Some theorize that this sudden folding of the earth's crust occurred as a result of the rapid release and subsequent depletion of subterranean waters. It is believed by some (not all) creationists that the earth's crust was at one time resting upon vast interconnected chambers of subterranean water under great pressure. One day, this pressure broke through the crust with an energy release exceeding one trillion megatons of TNT<sup>22</sup> and caused a great land mass to split apart, forming the American and Eurasian-African land masses.

The point where this break-up occurred is believed to be evidenced by the great mid-Atlantic ridge. The great explosion of force would have expelled, into the atmosphere and across the surface of the earth, enough sediment to account for most of the earth's sedimentary material as well as the formation of the innumerable fossils contained therein. Furthermore, the consequences of this event would provide a better explanation for the sudden formation of controversial phenomenon such as salt domes glaciers, the 'ice age,' coal formation, major mountain chains, over thrusts, ocean trenches, submarine canyons, the Grand Canyon, magnetic patterns on the ocean floor strata continental shelves

and slopes, submarine volcanoes, metamorphic rock and other strange features.<sup>23</sup>

This great explosion of force would have caused each part of the broken land mass to begin moving away from the other, gliding atop the rapidly depleting ocean of subterranean waters. Eventually, these land masses would come to a ‘grinding halt’ once the water ‘lubricant’ beneath them was depleted to a point where the greater forces of friction would take over. This sudden ‘slowing down’ of the continents would have caused considerable folding, faulting, buckling and general havoc upon the earth’s crust, similar to what would happen to a moving automobile that was suddenly slowed down by an encounter with a block wall.

Psalm 104 mentions this re-shaping of the earth’s crust in verses six through nine, “Thou didst cover it with the deep as with a garment; the waters were standing above the mountains. At thy rebuke they fled; at the sound of thy thunder they hurried away. *The mountains rose; the valleys sank down* to the place which thou didst establish for them. Thou didst set a boundary that they may not pass over; that they may not return to cover the earth.” (KJV) The higher mountains and deeper oceans are the main reason that water “May not return to cover the earth.”

Another contributing factor in God’s flood prevention program is that much of the water was precipitated and frozen in our polar regions. If the polar ice caps were to suddenly melt, our oceans would rise 200 feet; which in turn, would completely submerge most of the costal states and many countries of the world.<sup>24</sup> The temperature change that caused the once tropical polar regions to become solid ice, was also responsible for the formation of the great continental ice sheets or “ice age.” There is really no valid scientific explanation for the origin of these great ice sheets unless one considers the possibility of a global flood. There have

been approximately *thirty* different theories to explain the phenomenon of this widespread glaciation<sup>25</sup> and, in each case; these theories were destroyed by subsequent scientific evidence against their validity.

In the ninth chapter of Genesis, God promised Noah that he would never destroy the earth again with a flood. God kept His promise by establishing our high mountain ranges, our deep oceans and our polar regions. It is no longer possible, through any natural processes, for the earth to ever be covered again with water.

In summary, the strict creationist theory maintains that the earth is relatively young and that it was designed and created by God. The creationist also believes that corruption entered the world and brought forth death and decay. This process of deterioration is slowly causing the entire universe to change from an orderly state to a disorderly state and will eventually cause the universe to die if it is left to itself, furthermore, the creationist believes that our present earth and environment are quite different from the original earth and its climate as a result of a global flood and its catastrophic effects.

The creationist theory is diametrically opposed to the theory of evolution in almost all areas. The most important difference between evolution and creation is the Biblical Creationist concept that categorizes man as a special being created in the image of God, and possessing special attributes that no animal can attain to. Furthermore, man has a special purpose in life that can only be fulfilled through fellowship with his Creator, the source of life.

Before delving into the wealth of evidence against the theory of evolution, it should again be stated that not all Christians believe in the literal creationist theory. Some endorse other theories that attempt to somehow harmonize creation with evolution; while others claim that the first chapters of Genesis are merely poetic and are not to be taken literally. This claim is made in spite of the fact that a literal six-day

creation is referred to in other books of the Bible. Their contention is: If the first page of the first book of the Bible has no literal significance, then who is to say that other pages throughout the rest of the Bible can't be discounted as well.

One of the alternative Christian theories is known as the "Day Age" theory. The "Day Age" theory claims that the six days of creation actually represent six long "ages" or periods of time that spanned millions of years. This assumption is made because the Hebrew word "yom," which has been translated to read "day" in the first chapter of Genesis, can sometimes be used to represent long indefinite periods of time.

However, such reasoning encounters numerous difficulties when given a closer consideration. True, the word "yom" can at times mean a long period of time but this is seldom the case. Furthermore, the context of Genesis strictly prohibits the translation of this word to mean anything but a literal 24 hour period. This is because there is an orderly sequence of "days" from one to six and each day of creation ends with the statement, ". . . and there was evening and there was morning..."<sup>26</sup>

Even if the "days" of Genesis *were* actually "ages," the Biblical sequence of creative events would still be drastically different from the stages of development that are proposed by the theory of evolution. For example, the Bible says that plants, herbs and trees were made on the third day while living creatures of the sea didn't come about until the fifth day. Another difficulty is found in the fact that the sun and moon weren't created until the fourth day, which would mean that the plants would have had to survive without energy from the sun for possibly millions of years since they were created on the third day or "age."

This theory is not only unscientific, it is also unscriptural. It is an inadequate attempt to explain the apparent discrepancies between evolutionary assumptions and the Biblical account of creation.



Advocates of this theory will soon discover that such rationalizations are not necessary, once they become acquainted with the overwhelming evidence revealed in the next chapters of this book.

Another compromising theory is known as the “gap theory.” This theory suggests that there is an enormous gap in time between the first and second verses of Genesis, chapter one. The first verse simply says: “In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.” The second verse says: “And the earth was formless and void, and darkness was over the surface of the deep...” Proponents of this theory state that there was an abundance of life on the planet after the creation account described in Genesis chapter one, *verse one*. They claim that this “pre-Adamic” civilization was then judged and destroyed by God, possibly because of Satan’s rebellion. The end result of this judgment was the formless, void dark earth mentioned in Genesis chapter one, *verse two*.

This theory is another attempt to explain the great geological ages that are so frequently referred to by evolutionists; as well as to provide an explanation for the many extinct creatures found in fossilized form. The “gap theory” accommodates the evolutionary assumption of an earth that is billions of years old and it offers an explanation for the fossil record. Why? *To avoid any conflict between the scriptures and popular evolutionary thought.*

From a Christian prospective, the biggest problem with this theory and the previously mentioned “day age” theory is that suffering and death would have entered into the world, long before the first real man (Adam) was created. However, the Bible says that death entered the world *after* Adam willfully sinned against God. Another Bible reference that is likewise damaging to both Christian theories is found in the twentieth chapter of Exodus, verse eleven which says: “For in six days the Lord made the heavens and the earth, the sea, and all that is in them and rested (ceased) on the Seventh day.” This verse negated the “gap

theory” because it includes the “*heavens and the earth*” within the six days of creation. It contradicts the “day age” theory because it states that creation took place in *six literal days*. Why, because the Hebrew word used here for “days” is “yamim.” This word occurs almost seven hundred times throughout the Bible and in each case refers to literal 24 hour days.<sup>27</sup> Plus, the most important aspect of this verse in Exodus is that it was personally written by God Himself on tablets of stone according to the Bible.

Christians who are advocates of the “gap” and “day age” theories should carefully re-evaluate their credibility because it is not necessary to sacrifice one’s intellect in order to believe the literal creationist theory. The creationist has a substantial amount of scientific data to support his theory - *including the same fossil record that has been erroneously used by evolutionists to support their theory*. However, it should be emphasized that total acceptance of the creationist theory is not a prerequisite to being a good Christian or Jew. Nevertheless, it can be categorically stated that acceptance of the classical theory of evolution is certainly not harmonious with classical Jewish and Christian beliefs. There is no academic reason to accept the theory of evolution because it is confronted by many obstacles that it cannot effectively overcome. Some of these obstacles will be addressed throughout the following pages.

### ***The Truth:***

*“In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.” (Genesis 1: 1)*

*“In the six hundredth year of Noah's life, in the second month, on the seventeenth day of the month, on the same day all the fountains of the*

*great deep burst open, and the floodgates of the sky were opened....  
Then the flood came upon the earth for forty days, and the water  
increased and lifted up the ark, so that it rose above the earth..... The  
water prevailed more and more upon the earth, so that all the high  
mountains everywhere under the heavens were covered..... The water  
prevailed fifteen cubits higher, and the mountains were covered.... The  
water prevailed upon the earth one hundred and fifty days.”*  
(Genesis 7: 11,17,19, 20, 24)

*“You covered it with the deep as with a garment; The waters were  
standing above the mountains. At Your rebuke they fled, At the sound of  
Your thunder they hurried away. The mountains rose; the valleys sank  
down To the place which You established for them. You set a boundary  
that they may not pass over, So that they will not return to cover the  
earth.” (Psalm 104: 6-9)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## II

## OLD AND GETTING BETTER?

***The Lie: The longer that evolution continues, systems become more complex***

According to the theory of evolution, the earth and all of its complex life systems are the remarkable result of unharnessed energy, random physical processes (and of course, pure luck itself) all working together throughout eons of time. For, without vast epochs of time, the folly of evolution would be apparent to even its most militant advocates because the natural transformation of one species to another “kind” or order has *never been observed in human history*. Thus, mankind has been led to believe that, because of enough time and energy, our cosmos has arisen from the ash heap of eternity to its present state.

It all sounds so mystical and intellectual until it is put under the microscope of unbiased observation. However, finding an unbiased observer is a little difficult these days because most people are convinced that evolution is a fact, not a theory, by the time they graduate from grammar school. Students would laugh if they were told that the Sears Tower was produced by random explosions that occurred in a nearby building supply yard; yet, they seriously believe an idea called evolution that is far more ludicrous because living systems are far more complex than the Sears Tower. Why then do they believe so strongly in evolution? It is because they have been denied access to the growing wealth of information that would expose the folly of evolution. How have they been denied? Through an insidious educational network that

has become more political and more humanistic than scientific. It has taken a considerable amount of time, planning and energy to erect the tangled web of evolutionary thought; but if common sense is allowed to raise its head it shouldn't take long to break free from evolution's sticky snare.

### *Thermodynamics*

Two of the most basic laws of science are known as the first and second laws of thermodynamics. These are the two most irrefutable and irrevocable laws of science and nature. Everything that has been observed in our universe is governed by these two principles.<sup>1</sup>

The First Law of Thermodynamics is also known as the Law of Conservation of Energy and Matter. Basically this law states that the total amount of matter or energy never changes within a closed system. In other words, energy may change from one form to another, but the total amount will always remain the same. Matter, likewise may be changed from one form to another, but the total mass must always remain the same. Since this is true, there is no new matter or energy being created or destroyed anywhere in the world today. It is simply changing from one form to another while the total quantity remains the same. Once again, this is the most basic law of science and the creationist is in complete agreement with this law.

In the second chapter of Genesis, the first and second verses say: "Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended His work which He had made." Therefore, the Bible tells us that the creation of the world and universe, with all of their special physical processes were completed. And, that this world is a finished product that is subject to various natural laws that were built right into the system. In the New Testament, the fourth

chapter of the book of Hebrews also states that God's "works were finished from the foundation of the earth." (KJV)

The original creative processes have ended. Therefore, there is no new energy or matter being created or destroyed anywhere in the universe. All we witness is a change from one form into another while the total quantity remains the same. This is one of the most certain laws of all physical science, yet the evolutionist believes that new worlds are constantly being created from random particles and that "creation" is continuing on a daily basis, going from lower levels of complexity to higher levels of complexity. At this point, some might argue that any new "creation" of matter does not necessarily violate the first law of thermodynamics because matter is technically nothing more than energy in motion. Therefore, this "eternal" energy could have merely changed form and manifested itself as matter while its total quantity remained the same. However, such an assumption violates yet another basic principle of science known as the "Second Law of Thermodynamics."

The Second Law of Thermodynamics is also known as the Law of Increasing Entropy or disorder. This law states that any system that is left by itself will, in time, change from a complex state to a simple state, from an orderly state to a disorderly state, and in the case of energy; *from efficient energy to non-efficient energy.*

We observe this law in action throughout our daily lives. For example, we know that new clothing will eventually become worn and faded; we also know that our various foods will eventually spoil or lose their nutritional value as time continues. We see that all things grow old and eventually turn to dust if left to the elements of nature. It is because of this principle that it is impossible to build a perpetual motion machine because machinery requires a constant outside energy source and continual maintenance in order to operate and, even then, it eventually wears out and becomes nothing more than a pile of rust.

This law of deterioration not only applies to our earth, but, to our entire universe as well. We know that our sun will burn out someday and that our earth cannot last forever. The whole universe is running down like a giant clock and if present processes continue, our earth will eventually die a low level “heat death.” All useful energy will have been reduced to non-efficient, low level heat energy and the universe will have grown cold.

Nothing escapes the Second Law of Thermodynamics although some things appear to contradict it. For example, a building may be constructed of random bricks into a complex structure. But, that is only because there is a designer, a blue print and energy from outside sources. In other words, the building cannot construct itself. And, even though this complex structure is “created,” it is still subject to the second law of thermodynamics because it will eventually crumble and be reduced to dust as it is exposed to the elements of nature.

This principle is applicable to living systems. Living systems can only grow and develop because there is a definite organized blue print contained in the genetic code. (A blue print far more complex than any human architect could conceive of). Plus, outside energy sources must be utilized constantly or the organism will die. Even then, living systems still don’t escape the second law of thermodynamics no matter how much outside energy and planning is utilized because they all eventually succumb to this principle and become dust.

The creationist theory encounters no difficulty with this law because it is another scientific truth that was contained in scripture long before it was discovered. The tenth and eleventh verses of the first chapter of Hebrews states this principle by saying: “And thou O Lord in the beginning didst lay the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the work of thy hands; *They will perish but thou remainest; And they will become old as a garment...*” (KJV) Jesus Himself said; “*Heaven*

*and earth will pass away* but my words shall never go away.” This law of “deterioration” is expressed throughout the Bible and the creationist believes that it is the result of God’s judgment upon sin as recorded in Genesis chapter three.

The evolutionist has great difficulty with this firmly established law of science because evolution infers that matter is continually changing from lower orders of complexity to higher orders of complexity. Evolutionists believe that new worlds are continually being formed from random particles; that life has evolved from non-living matter; that “simple” living organisms evolved into complex human beings; and that all of this has been accomplished without a designer or creator. This kind of reasoning defies the two most basic laws of science.

### *Cause and Effect*

The law of Cause and Effect is another basic and universally accepted law of science. This law states that every known phenomenon is an effect to a cause. And, that the cause must always be greater or superior to the effect. In other words, there is always a cause behind everything that exists and this cause is always quantitatively greater or superior to its effect.<sup>2</sup> According to this law, it is impossible to “effect” something from nothing. Therefore, it is reasonable to assume that there is a “first cause” responsible for our vast, complex universe and all that it contains.

If we apply this principle of Cause and Effect to the creation or “evolution” of man, it is logical to assume that the first cause of human intelligence must at least be intelligent; the first cause of spiritual values must at least be spiritual; the first cause of biological complexity must at least be complex and orderly; the first cause of creativity must be creative,... Could random matter be a sufficient first cause for even the



simplest of living cells? If one considers the first cause of our complex universe and all it contains; and takes into consideration such entities as endless time, space, and energy, it would be reasonable to assume that this “first cause” could be the Omnipotent, Omnipresent, Eternal, Personal and Living God who the creationist believes to be the source of all things.

### *Radiation*

Charles Darwin is the most famous evolutionist of all time because he is the person most responsible for the development of our modern theory of evolution. His book, *Origin of the Species*, was the evolutionist’s “bible” for many decades. Darwin believed that life evolved from simpler to more complex forms because of chance mutations that were caused by ionizing radiation, in conjunction with a process called “natural selection” or “survival of the fittest.”

The problem with this theory is that whenever mutations occur due to radiation, or any other cause, the net result is inferiority, disability, or death. Evolutionists have been trying for years to “create” beneficial mutations from radiation under laboratory conditions, yet without success. The fruit fly has been bombarded with radiation under laboratory conditions for thousands of successive generations without producing anything but changes that resulted in deformed fruit flies.<sup>3</sup> Ironically, these fervent efforts to prove the theory of evolution have produced more reasons to doubt its reliability.

### *Fossil Dating*

Most of our modern scientific procedures for determining the ages of various materials involve the measurement of natural physical processes. These measurements are all based upon the uniformitarian assumption that all processes are occurring at the same rate now as they

have in the past. There are numerous physical processes that could be used to determine ages; however, modern science seems to favor only those processes (and their respective formulas) that will render long ages of time in order to satisfy popular evolutionary assumptions.

However, in spite of the selective prejudice that is employed in determining ages, even the results obtained from these biased dating procedures are often erroneous and embarrassing for those who rely so heavily upon them. Oftentimes, materials that are *known* to be very young will give test results that indicate they are extremely old, while other materials that are historically *known* to be very old are calculated to be relatively new. In fact, modern radioactive dating methods can be so erratic and unreliable that they are not considered to be the most preferential method for determining correct ages of rocks and fossils. Indeed, they are used very often but their results are considered to be meaningless by scientists if they do not correspond with the assigned ages of index fossils in the strata of the geological column.<sup>4</sup>

Fossil dating is the ultimate scientifically accepted method for determining the ages of rocks and fossils. If the other dating methods give different ages than the fossil record indicates, the fossil record determination is usually preferred and all other results are discounted. Now, what is really amazing is that the entire process for dating in accordance with the fossil record is built entirely upon *circular reasoning*. Ironically, the one method that is accepted by the scientific community is based upon unscientific development.

The entire process of fossil dating was built upon the *theory* of evolution and it was initially developed when the patriarchs of evolution examined the strata of a few select geographical locations. At these locations, the different layers of sedimentary rock contained numerous fossils of many different types and species. And, as far as animal life is concerned, the simpler, less mobile sea animals were contained in the

bottom layers, while the more complex and mobile land creatures were found in the upper layers. Because of this finding a specific order of evolutionary progression was established from the order contained in the layers of sedimentary rock. Some layers contained an abundance of certain extinct species; therefore, these fossilized species were called index fossils and, it is the index fossils that are most frequently used for establishing the ages of rocks.<sup>5</sup>

The theory of evolution needed vast epochs of time in order to be feasible; therefore, the evolutionists surmised that the fossil record showed a progressive upward development of life that may have taken billions of years to achieve. The different species were then arbitrarily assigned to a particular era based upon their position in the geological column.

With our modern techniques of excavating, it is now known that the geologic column is *not* in the same order all over the world. (This fact will be elaborated upon a little later in this section). However, in spite of the discrepancies in the fossil order around the world, modern evolutionists and geologists still use the same basic order of index fossil dating that was established by the early evolutionists.

This brings us to the great circle of reasoning that is employed when dating rocks and fossils. Here is an illustration of how it works: If an evolutionist discovers a rock containing the fossil of a dinosaur bone, he might give the specimen to a geologist for further analysis. Then, if the evolutionist is asked to prove that his dinosaur bone is at least 70 million years old (as he claims it is) he will say that the age of the rock that contained the bone was determined to be at least 70 million years old by a competent geologist. Now, if the geologist is later asked how he determined the rock to be at least 70 million years old, he will probably state that since it contains a dinosaur bone, it has to be at least 70 million years old because dinosaurs became extinct about 70 million

years ago. It sounds absurd but this practice has actually occurred when rocks and fossils are dated<sup>6</sup> because modern geology incorporates the *assumed* ages of index fossils into its system for dating rocks

### *Radioactive clocks*

Rocks cannot accurately be dated by any physical characteristic or appearance because rocks of all types are found in different orders or “ages” of the geologic column.<sup>7</sup> There are many “young” rocks that have the outward appearance of being very “old,” just as there are many “old” rocks that appear to be young. Therefore, the only other means for dating rocks and fossils involves using the radiometric methods and these are considered to be inferior to the fossil dating method described above. Some of the radiometric methods include carbon 14 dating, potassium argon, rubidium strontium, and various uranium methods.

Of these, carbon 14 is probably the most widely known. Carbon 14 is the radioactive isotope of natural carbon (C-12). It is formed in the upper atmosphere through reactions between nitrogen 14 and cosmic radiation. Few people realize that the carbon 14 dating method can only be used for dating materials that were once living organisms because all living things contain various amounts of carbon and theoretically there is a balance between natural carbon and carbon 14 within plants and animals. Now, whenever an organism dies, it ceases to exchange carbon and this theoretical balance between C-12 and C-14 slowly begins to change because the carbon 14 begins to decay after it is formed; while the amount of natural carbon remains the same. Carbon 14 has a half life of 5,730 years which means that if a plant or animal dies today, in 5,730 years it will have one half the amount of carbon 14 that was present at death. Then, in an additional 5,730 years, it will have 1/2 of the 1/2 or 1/4 of the original amount. This steady rate of decay continues and the ratio of carbon 14 to natural carbon continues to

change as time goes on.<sup>8</sup> Therefore, by determining the ratio of carbon 14 to natural carbon, the approximate age of the once-living material can be calculated.

There are several problems with radio carbon dating that most people are unaware of. One of these problems is that carbon 14 dating cannot accurately be used for establishing ages of more than 50,000 years.<sup>9</sup> This is because after 50,000 years of decay, there is only about 1/400th of the original amount of carbon 14 and smaller amounts cannot be measured with any consistent degree of reliability. Therefore, whenever an evolutionist states that a bone of some type has been dated at 70 million years, he has not arrived at this date through the carbon 14 dating process, but rather through fossil dating or one of the other inferior methods for dating the actual rocks that contained the bone.

Another problem with carbon 14 dating is that the whole mathematical equation is based upon the *assumption* that the rate of formation of carbon 14 in the upper atmosphere is equal to the rate of decay. This assumption is made because it would only take about 30,000 years for this equilibrium between production and decay to be established. And, since the originator of this dating method based his formula upon the evolutionary assumption that the earth is much older than 30,000 years, it was naturally assumed that the production and decay rates must be at a steady state.

However, recent measurements have indicated that the natural production rate *exceeds* the rate of decay by as much as 25%.<sup>10</sup> Evolutionists claim that this discrepancy must be due to inaccurate measurements because the earth is “obviously older than 30,000 years.” However, repeated measurements have indicated that the production rate exceeds the rate of decay by, in some cases, as much as 38%. Therefore, based upon these findings, our atmosphere would be calculated to be no more than 10,000 years old.<sup>11</sup> So, the standard equilibrium formula for

determining carbon 14 ages needs to be revised to accommodate this non-equilibrium state of carbon 14 formation and decay. When this is done, we find that both the equilibrium and the new non-equilibrium equations will render almost identical ages for materials that date back to 3000 years old.<sup>12</sup> However, at this point on the ages start to vary drastically between the two equations. This is interesting to note because the reliability of the standard carbon 14 dating method has been historically checked with a considerable degree of accuracy only within the past 3,000 years or so.

Another problem with carbon 14 dating is that all living systems are *not* in equilibrium for carbon 14 exchange. Because of this, the tissue from *living* animals has been known to indicate ages up to 3,000 years old. For example, the shells of living Mollusks have been dated at 2,300 years old by this method; live penguins have rendered ages of 3,000 years old; and recently killed seals have given ages of 1,000 years old.<sup>13</sup>

The other common dating methods, such as uranium-lead, rubidium strontium, and potassium-argon, are used for determining the ages of rocks rather than organic materials. However, their “track record” is even worse than that of carbon 14 because these methods will, more often than not, each render different results when used to date the exact same material. All of these other radiometric methods are based upon the fact that certain substances will slowly decay and change into other substances known as “daughter products,” at steady measurable rates. In other words, uranium decays into various isotopes of lead, potassium decays into argon 40, and rubidium 87 into strontium 87 at determinable rates.

Unfortunately, all of these methods are based upon some very unscientific *assumptions*. The first erroneous assumption in testing a rock for age is to assume that all of the daughter products present in a

given sample were, at onetime, parent products within the same sample. In other words, all of the lead present in a system is presumed to have come from the original uranium within the system rock specimen when it was first formed. Likewise, all of the argon present in a particular sample is assumed to have once been potassium; and all of the rubidium is assumed to have been strontium. However, there is absolutely no scientific way to determine if this is actually the case because it is a fact that all six products (parent and daughter products) of these three methods can be added to, or taken out of a system through natural processes. In fact, these products can even be leached in and out of a system by common ground water.<sup>14</sup> This virtually makes it impossible to accurately determine an age of a specimen because the ratios between parent and daughter products can be affected by common natural processes.

Of the three methods mentioned, potassium-argon is the most commonly used. How reliable is the potassium-argon method? Consider this: In one experiment, 80% of the potassium found in some meteorite samples was removed by distilled water in just 4½ hours. Prior to this experiment, the potassium-argon method was used to determine the age of these samples and had revealed that they were more than 50 billion years old.<sup>15</sup> This experiment and others like it demonstrate how easy it is to alter the ratio between parent and daughter products which, in turn, will alter the tested age of a material. Not only does potassium move in and out of a system rather easily (as demonstrated by the meteorite experiment) so does its daughter product argon 40. Argon 40 is a gas, so it obviously can move out of rock formations without a great amount of difficulty. This susceptibility to natural alteration is true of all the parent and daughter products of the radiometric dating methods.

There is no such thing as a ‘closed system’ in nature. And, all of these methods can only be valid if they have been in a closed system, unaffected by any outside sources since they were first formed. Even if it was somehow possible to know that a rock had been in a completely closed system (which it isn’t) there would still be no way of proving that some of the daughter products were not present when the rock was originally formed. Why? Because the scientists were not there when a “5 billion” year old rock was formed; so, they have no way of knowing for sure that there were no daughter products present in the beginning. Is this an unreasonable qualification? Not really, because there is evidence which indicates that all “daughter” products could not have been formed by their “parent” products. For example, all of the argon 40 in the world could not have originally been potassium because there is too much of it available. In fact, even if the earth were 5 billion years old, only 1% of the available argon could have possibly been formed from potassium.<sup>16</sup>

There are also numerous documented cases in which rocks that were known to have been recently formed were calculated to be billions of years old by these radiometric testing methods. In one case, the Hawaiian Institute of Geophysics conducted a study of submarine basaltic rocks in Hawaii. The potassium argon dates that were obtained from the lavas of one active volcano indicated a variety of ages that ranged as high as 22 million years old. The problem with these test results was that the rocks were known to have been formed *less than 200 years ago*.<sup>17</sup> Another volcanic flow which was formed near Hualalai, Hawaii in 1801 gave potassium argon ages that ranged from 160 million years old to 3 billion years old.<sup>18</sup> A study was also made of rock samples from 12 volcanoes in Russia and 10 others from around the world, using the conventional radiometric dating methods. The various ages from these tests ranged from 100 million to 10 billion years old. However, in



each case the rocks were known to have been formed within the past 200 years.<sup>19</sup> Obviously, there must have been daughter products already present when these rocks were first formed, otherwise they wouldn't have indicated such enormous ages.

Another problem with the radioactive dating methods is that they are based upon the uniformitarian assumption that all processes occur at the same rate today as they have in the past. It is assumed that radioactive decay rates have always been the same throughout history; however, this is not necessarily true, because it is known that radioactive decay rates can be altered by such phenomenon as super nova explosions (exploding stars) and the reversal of the earth's magnetic field.<sup>20</sup> And, it is believed by most scientists that these phenomenon have indeed occurred in the past and thus would have caused radioactive decay rates to change. If this is the case, then radioactive test results would be meaningless since these methods must assume that decay rates have always been the same.

***UPDATE: The following paragraph was also added to the original work.***

A further piece of damaging evidence to this uniformitarian logic is the recent data that seems to indicate that the speed of light itself has been gradually slowing down.<sup>21</sup> These findings are being strongly opposed by evolutionists because, if they are substantiated, the evolutionary scenarios regarding the age of the universe will have to be "thrown out the window." Why? Because projections based upon measurements that have been made during the present and past decades seem to indicate that the speed of light could have been "*10 billion times faster at time zero*".<sup>22</sup>

The radioactive methods are used so frequently to determine ages because their results often indicate great ages of millions and billions of years. The theory of evolution needs great periods of time to explain the

“origin of the species,” which is one reason why these tests methods are used in spite of their unreliability. But, remember, if there is any major discrepancy between a radioactive date and an index fossil date, the radioactive date is discarded, and the circular reasoning of fossil dating remains the final authority for determining age.

There are numerous other natural physical processes that could be used for determining the age of the earth, but, these are often ignored because they do not yield the vast periods of time that the evolutionist so desperately needs. If uniformitarianism is correct (which it isn't), and all processes continue at the same rates today as they have in the past, then why not consider a host of other natural processes that could be used for calculating the age of the earth?

#### *A magnetic attraction*

Consider for example, the earth's magnet. The magnetic field of the earth has been carefully observed by scientists for the past 140 years<sup>23</sup> and tests revealed that the earth's magnet has been deteriorating at a relatively rapid rate. It is known that the magnetic field of the earth has a half-life of 1400 years, which means that 1400 years ago it would have been twice as strong as it is today; 2,800 years ago it would have been four times stronger; 4,200 years ago, eight times stronger; 5,600 years ago, sixteen times stronger; and 7,000 years ago, thirty-two times stronger. Now, if all processes are occurring today at the same rate as they have in the past, then 10,000 years ago, the earth's magnet would have been as strong as that of a magnetic star and metallic objects would have been virtually impossible to move.<sup>24</sup> Therefore, according to magnetic field measurements, it would be unlikely for the earth to be more than 7,000 years old.

Does this young age seem improbable? Remember, the same uniformitarian logic was used to arrive at this figure

as that which is used in radiometric dating to arrive at the opposite extremes.

### *Sea Rain*

The oceans contain tiny plants called diatoms which form a type of plankton. These diatoms form protective shells that settle to the bottom of the ocean after these organisms die. The shells are then mixed with other materials that have been carried to the oceans by our river systems and together they form a sediment known as “sea rain.”

Approximately 27.5 billion tons of sediments are being transported to the ocean each year.<sup>25</sup> It has been estimated that the ocean already contains about 820 million billion tons of these sediments.<sup>26</sup> Therefore, by dividing the total amount of sediments already present in the ocean by the annual transport rate, the age of the ocean is calculated to be about 30 million years old.

Thirty million years is definitely a long time, but it is not even close to the three to five billion year age that evolutionists claim the ocean to be. This calculation of course, is based upon the evolutionary assumption that all processes are occurring at the same rate now as they have in the past. However, the creationist believes that the Noachic flood would have been responsible for depositing most of the ocean’s sediments in a very short time because of its catastrophic nature. Indeed, core samples from the deep ocean sediments indicate that their deposition was rapid and violent rather than gradual.<sup>27</sup> Besides, even if the oceans were actually thirty million years old, according to the evolutionary framework dinosaurs would have already been extinct for 40 million years before the first sediments were deposited on the ocean floor.

### *Cosmic Dust*

There is a constant influx of cosmic dust particles that fall to the earth from outer space and it has been estimated that 14 million tons of this meteoritic material fall to earth each year.<sup>28</sup> At this rate, it can be calculated that in five billion years there should be a 182 ft. thick layer of this cosmic dust all over the entire surface of the earth. Is this the case? Obviously not; therefore, some evolutionists have tried to explain the absence of this layer by theorizing that this dust could have been mixed into the crust of the earth throughout this long time period. However, this speculation is highly improbable because cosmic dust contains a proportion of nickel that is about 300 times greater than that of earth's crust.<sup>29</sup> This means that *all* of the nickel present in the earth's crust today would have had to come from outer space if the earth really is five billion years old and this is not only improbable, but ludicrous.

### *Oceanic Elements*

The influx of chemical elements into the ocean represents another constant measurable process that could be used to indicate age. For example, the rivers of the world carry about 750 million pounds of nickel into the ocean each year<sup>30</sup> and it is estimated that the ocean contains approximately 7,000 billion total pounds of nickel. This means that all of the nickel content of the ocean could have been accumulated from the river systems in just 9,000 years according to annual transport rates.<sup>31</sup> Furthermore; this figure is also based upon the assumption that the oceans never had any nickel to begin with.

If the earth is five billion years old, then according to annual transport rates, the ocean should contain 555,000 times the amount of nickel that it contains today. What's the evolutionary excuse this time? Some speculate that this nickel may have been precipitated and returned to land through the atmosphere. However, this idea represents a poor excuse because any precipitated amounts would be relatively small and

incapable of accounting for the vast quantities of missing nickel. Other evolutionists claim that the nickel may have been precipitated out on the ocean bottom. However, if this were true, there would be 960 pounds of nickel on every square foot of the ocean floor if transportation rates have been the same for five billion years.<sup>32</sup>

The influx of nickel into the ocean from rivers is not the only process of this type that indicates a relatively young earth. The influx of many other chemical elements such as uranium, lead, tin, mercury, gold, copper, aluminum, potassium, magnesium, sodium, etc., all indicate a much younger earth than the theory of evolution portrays.

Yes, there are many other measurable processes that yield relatively young ages for our earth. In fact, *the vast majority* of all measurable physical processes indicate a relatively young age for planet earth. And even though the creationist does not totally agree with the evolutionist doctrine of uniformitarianism, it is ironic that the creationist can use that very doctrine to show evidence for a relatively young earth by calculating measurements based upon the classic uniformitarian assumption that the “present is the key to the past.”

***NOTE: It is important to remember that the few examples cited above were written about 30 years ago. They were cited to show examples of how “uniformitarian” assumptions can be used to also show that the earth is relatively young by calculating observable and measureable physical processes. Since the time of this writing, the theory of evolution has been “evolving” and now includes more catastrophic events to explain many anomalies with some convincing scientific data. However, for every creationist viewpoint of the past that is now called into question and mocked by the scientific community, there are a dozen others that cannot be reasonably explained by the evolutionist.***

*One of the best books available that concisely, and yet thoroughly, explains and illustrates the “mountains of evidence supporting creation; while exposing the many fallacies that are believed by most evolutionists, is a book called “In the Beginning – Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood.” This book was written by Dr. Walt Brown (mentioned previously in this chapter) and it is consistently updated and revised to address recent arguments and evaluate recent discoveries. Dr Brown is brilliant and he has presented an ongoing offer to debate any person or team of evolutionists in writing over this issue: “Does the scientific evidence favor creation or evolution?” To participate, the lead evolutionist must hold a doctorate in either applied or basic science and the debate must be in writing and publishable. The debate also has to be strictly scientific and must avoid religion.<sup>33</sup>*

*To date, Dr. Brown has had no takers even though this has become one of the most controversial topics in many of our school systems. The excuses that have been made to avoid such a debate are very weak and shallow (Dr. Brown documents some of them in his book.) In one case he had an evolutionist agree to the debate and then the person later decided not to participate if he couldn't bring up religion in the debate.<sup>34</sup> There are occasionally a few derogatory comments made about Dr. Brown on the internet and accusations that he is the one who refuses to debate. These comments are lies. He will only refuse to debate if his opponent wants religion to become part of the debate. (Imagine that, wanting a scientific debate based upon scientific facts only and not religion?)*

*Dr. Brown will also agree to a recorded phone debate in classrooms as long as the debate can be heard by the class. In this case, the*

*student or teacher does not have to hold a doctorate in basic or applied science to participate. A link to Dr. Brown's website and book will be provided at the end of this book.*

***The Truth:***

*“Thus the heavens and the earth were completed, and all their hosts. By the seventh day God completed His work which He had done, and He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had done.”  
(Genesis 2:1,2)*

*The heavens are telling of the glory of God; And their expanse is declaring the work of His hands.” (Psalm 19:1)*

*“And, "YOU, LORD, IN THE BEGINNING LAID THE FOUNDATION OF THE EARTH, AND THE HEAVENS ARE THE WORKS OF YOUR HANDS; THEY WILL PERISH, BUT YOU REMAIN; AND THEY ALL WILL BECOME OLD LIKE A GARMENT, AND LIKE A MANTLE YOU WILL ROLL THEM UP; LIKE A GARMENT THEY WILL ALSO BE CHANGED. BUT YOU ARE THE SAME, AND YOUR YEARS WILL NOT COME TO AN END.” (Hebrews 11:10-12)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## III

## FOSSILS PROVE EVOLUTION?

*The Lie: The fossil record reveals an upward progression of complexity in life systems*

One of the last evolutionary strongholds is built around the fossil record of the geological column. Why? It is because evolution of one “kind” into another “kind” cannot be, and has not been observed by any scientist of any generation. The evolutionist claims that the reason for not being able to witness evolution is because the process takes millions and billions of years. Therefore, the only “proof” that the evolutionist can offer to support this theory is the historical record provided by the vast number of fossils throughout the geologic column. The evolutionist claims that the fossils show an evolutionary progression of simpler types of animals advancing toward more complex types. Let us briefly consider how substantial this proof really is.

*Fossil Formation*

The first consideration pertains to how a fossil is actually formed; what has to take place before an animal or plant can become fossilized? The first thing necessary for fossilization is rapid burial with the proper types and amounts of sediment or else the organism will merely deteriorate from natural processes before fossilization can ever occur. There must also be a certain amount of pressure and the presence of cementing chemicals in the water to insure fossilization. The initial and



most important stage of fossilization is not a slow process but a sudden burial from some type of catastrophic event.<sup>1</sup>

The fossil record contains literally billions upon billions of fossilized plants and animals whose remains were suddenly preserved in sedimentary rock all over the world. Now, if evolution and uniformitarianism is correct, this phenomenal process should still be occurring on the same grand scale that it has in the past. However, this is not the case because relatively few fossils are ever formed in today's world. Consider the millions of buffalo that once roamed the plains of America. These great animals died by the millions, yet there is not a single fossil to be found anywhere.

The "Monterey Shale" of California contains the fossils of more than one billion herring in four square miles of ocean bottom.<sup>2</sup> What could possibly account for the annihilation and subsequent fossilization of this many fish except for a great catastrophic event unlike anything modern man has ever witnessed. Certain evolutionists have stated that a "red tide" could produce this type of catastrophic annihilation but what they usually fail to mention is that a "red tide" does not produce *fossilization*. Sea creatures which perish as a result of a "red tide" simply float to the top of the water where their remains soon disappear.

There are great fossil graveyards of many different types of animals all over the world which cannot be sufficiently explained by any process known today. *The only sufficient explanation is a worldwide catastrophic flood*. For example, there are enormous dinosaur graveyards in Wyoming, New Mexico, Canada, Belgium and other places throughout the world. These graveyards contains thousands upon thousands of dinosaur bones and in many cases, the bones are all interlaced and piled on top of each other as though they were washed away and subsequently buried together. Some scientists have made reference to the fact that these bones are often piled up like "logs in a

jam.”<sup>3</sup> The graveyard in Belgium contains dinosaur bones that are piled on top of each other to a depth of more than 100 feet.<sup>4</sup> So, what kind of local catastrophe could account for the sudden destruction and burial of such a large quantity of these huge magnificent beasts?

The great mammoth graveyards present even a greater problem for evolutionists. The frozen wastelands of Alaska and Siberia contain the remains of an estimated *five million* mammoth elephants. Some of these huge creatures were 15 feet tall and had tusks up to 13 feet long.<sup>5</sup> In the northern parts of these regions, many of the mammoths have been completely preserved in the perpetually frozen ground while their hair and skin have remained intact and in some cases, *with food still in their stomachs and mouths*. The plants that these great beasts were eating were of those types which grow in sub-tropical climates and are completely foreign to that cold region.<sup>6</sup> There is no way possible that the current vegetation of these regions could ever have sustained such a quantity of these gigantic beasts because the mammoths needed to consume an estimated 500 to 600 pounds of food each day in order to maintain their bodies.<sup>7</sup> This presents a real difficulty because plants in these regions are relatively scarce and seldom grow over a few inches tall in the peak of the summer growing season. This strange phenomenon represents further evidence that the pre-flood world contained a uniform worldwide climate.

Another interesting finding was made by scientists who determined that the frozen mammoths must have died by drowning because their heads contained a concentrated amount of blood.<sup>8</sup> This observation was made in spite of the fact that the elephant is a very good swimmer. Examinations of these animals around the Polar Regions further revealed that they had to have somehow been “quick frozen” by temperatures as low as -150° F. and possibly lower.<sup>9</sup> There is no known process today

that can account for such a drastically low temperature - one which had to have been reached very suddenly.

The evolutionist's theory that these mammoths must have been overtaken by a slow moving ice age is ridiculous, especially since tropical food was found in their mouths and stomachs. And, in addition to the tropical food, seed bearing plants were also found in full-growth as well as an elderberry tree that was full of ripe berries.<sup>10</sup> Why don't we witness the grand scale fossilization of giant beasts accompanied by sudden radical changes in climate and terrain in today's world? Because there is only one event in recorded history that can account for such phenomenon and that event is the Noahic Flood.

Evolutionists have had to alter their uniformitarian views as time continues to unfold more and more evidence of Global catastrophe. However, the more recent evolutionary claims that fossils may have been produced from local catastrophes and flooding are not really sufficient to account for the billions of fossils that are preserved around the world. Remember, most local catastrophes in our modern world fail to produce any fossils and whenever a fossil is produced, it is an extremely rare event. By contrast, the fossil record of the ancient world is filled with many incidents of mass burial. Fossils have been found on the tops of the Rocky Mountains and other great mountain ranges. Now, the question is what type of local flooding or other known process today can achieve such phenomenon? The answer is *none!*

### *Petrified Wood*

Petrified wood is another type of fossil that presents some real difficulties for evolutionists. Petrified wood is a fossil in which the organic molecular structure of wood has been replaced by the inorganic mineral content of water. There are actual forests of petrified trees found all over the world. Of course, most of these trees have been

broken into short segments but some logs have measured up to 125 feet long and seven feet in diameter.<sup>11</sup> In some instances complete trees have been found with their foliage stripped from their branches yet with their bark still intact. It is interesting to note that these trees are usually found in a random scattered position as though they had been washed away and then became trapped and buried. But, the real significance of petrified wood is that the process of petrification is nowhere occurring in the world today on any grand scale.<sup>12</sup> Uniformitarian processes, including local catastrophic events, have never been able to produce these forests of petrified wood. When a tree falls, or is washed away, it simply rots and decomposes.

Petrified wood obviously was not produced by any slow, drawn out evolutionary process since the bark is still intact on many of these petrified trees. Only a flood of worldwide proportions could have ever been capable of producing petrified wood on such a massive scale.

### *Coal*

The formation of coal presents yet another problem for evolution. The evolutionist believes that coal was formed over a period of millions of years from the peat produced from rotting plants. This peat was then covered with certain sediments until coal was finally produced by gradual compression over a period of millions of years.

The creationist also believes that coal was formed from plants, but, in a much different fashion. Remember, the pre-flood world would have been lushly vegetated due to the tropical type climate and healthy atmosphere. Therefore, as a result of the flood, some trees were actually fossilized, but the vast majority of the uprooted vegetation could have been used to produce our coal seams.

It takes approximately 20 vertical feet of vegetation to produce one vertical foot of coal by compression (without any heat loss).<sup>13</sup>

Therefore, it would have required enormous amounts of vegetation to produce our vast quantities of coal. Sure, some coal seams are only a few inches thick but others are several hundred feet thick.<sup>14</sup> And, in some cases, these coal seams are repeated dozens of times in a single vertical section of strata.

The creationist believes that these coal seams could have only been formed by the Noahic flood which would have uprooted the vast quantities of vegetation needed to produce such great coal seams. This vegetation would have eventually become water soaked and would have settled to the bottom depths of the flood waters where it would have been buried by sediments in various layers and then subjected to extreme pressures in some areas of more than a two mile depth of water.

How long does it take to form coal? Laboratory tests have shown that coal can be produced from wood pulp in just seven days under extreme pressures and temperatures.<sup>15</sup> Indeed, there are several indications that our coal seams were formed rather rapidly instead of gradually over millions of years. One such indication is that fossilized trees have been found which extend *vertically* through multiple layers of coal seams.<sup>16</sup> If each seam took millions of years to produce, how could trees have lived for millions of years while these coal seams were being formed around their trunks? These coal seams are found from the bottoms to the tops of these trees - trees which did not even have a chance to decompose before the coal was formed. Fossils of marine animals have also been found right in the middle of coal seams.<sup>17</sup> Certainly it would not have taken millions of years for these animals to decompose while coal was slowly being formed around them.

If uniformitarian evolution is correct, we should be able to find someplace where coal is in the process of being formed today. However, this is not the case, because there is not a single place in the world today where coal is being made or is in the process of being

made.<sup>18</sup> There has never been a peat bog discovered anywhere in which the bottom depths are in the process of forming coal. Even the Great Dismal Swamp of Virginia has only been able to produce an average depth of seven feet of peat.<sup>19</sup> This peat (if it were possible) would only be capable of producing a coal seam of a few inches thick; therefore, how could it be possible to form coal seams hundreds of feet thick by today's natural processes.

### *Oil*

The classic evolutionist also believes that oil was formed from animal matter by the same slow processes that produced coal. Conversely the creationist believes that the sudden catastrophic annihilation of animal life would have been the only way possible to produce the huge oil reservoirs of the world. It is now known that great epochs of time are not necessary for oil production because scientists have been able to manufacture oil from common garbage in the laboratory in just twenty minutes.<sup>20</sup> It is also a fact that oil is not being produced anywhere in the world today by natural processes<sup>21</sup> except for in limited quantities *under the ocean*.

### *Something is missing*

There is no modern process or local catastrophe known, that can sufficiently account for the production of oil, coal, petrified wood, and the billions of fossils contained in the earth's crust. In spite of this, evolutionists still maintain that the fossil record offers the best "proof" for the theory of evolution because it shows an upward progression of life from "simple" forms on the bottom layers of sedimentary rock to highly complex forms in the upper layers. Therefore, evolutionists have devised a specific order or framework from the fossil record which

supposedly demonstrates the various stages of evolution over the past few billion years.

One of the problems with this evolutionary framework is that it doesn't exactly fit the fossil record. In fact, there is not a single geographic location in the world where these fossils are found in this exact order.<sup>22</sup> Often times there are many layers of sedimentary rock as well as many intermediate species that are missing between "lower forms" and "higher forms" of life. In the fossil record the evolutionist claims that the strata is missing because of erosion or due to a shifting of the earth's crust. However, the problem with this theory lies in the fact that the layer above and the layer below the missing strata are often found resting one on top of the other like two flat books with a straight plane between them. These layers show no signs of erosion, no hills or valleys, and no irregular surfaces. If faulting of the earth's crust were responsible, there would at least be found layers of ground up rock called fault breccia.<sup>22</sup>

The Grand Canyon offers a prime example of how the various layers of sedimentary rock form the geologic column. Many of these layers are very distinctive and rest quite evenly one upon the other, *yet 50% of the geological column is missing in more than one-half of the canyon.*<sup>24</sup>

### *Upside Down*

Not only are there many examples of missing strata, there are also many places in which the fossilized species are out of order - where "older" fossils are found resting on top of 'younger' fossils. There are even some places where the order of fossils is almost completely reversed from the evolutionary framework. At these locations, the stages of development are found in backwards order with "lower forms" on top and "higher forms" on the bottom.<sup>25</sup>

The Lewis “Over thrust” of Montana and Alberta is an area that is 350 miles wide. In this area, there is a 35 to 40 mile strip of pre-Cambrian limestone that is found resting on top of crustaceous rock that is presumed to be 500 million years younger than the limestone because of the fossils contained therein. In many places this enormous mass of Precambrian rock is resting quite naturally on top of the “younger” crustaceous rock without showing any signs of disturbance. Therefore, in order to explain this great discrepancy, the evolutionist says that there was an over thrust of the earth’s crust which pushed the immense pre-Cambrian rock mass up and over the top of the crustaceous rock for a distance of forty miles.

How plausible is this contention? Consider this: Whenever over thrusts occur, they leave evidence of the grinding action that takes place when one layer pushes across another. This evidence is lacking at the Lewis “Over thrust” and furthermore, it is inconceivable to think that the present forces of nature could ever achieve such a phenomenon.<sup>27</sup> Why? because the pre-Cambrian rock mass has been calculated to weigh 800 thousand billion tons and the forces necessary to move the solid rock mass upward and then laterally for 35 miles would have caused the mass to crumble and thus would have prevented it from being transported in a coherent block.<sup>28</sup>

There are many other places throughout the world where huge layers of “older” rock are found resting neatly on top of much “younger” rock. Many of these supposed “over thrusts” are thousands of feet thick yet they somehow managed to move up and over great distances with no evidence of such catastrophic movement. There is one area in Scandinavia of 85,000 square miles where this phenomenon occurs<sup>29</sup> and there is another huge section in north China that is 500 miles long.<sup>30</sup> Even the Swiss Alps are full of fossils in this upside down order so geologists have claimed that the Alps were pushed from Africa into



Europe. If this is so, it must have somehow occurred without causing a violent disturbance upon the earth's crust because any real evidence of this incredible journey is forever missing.<sup>31</sup>

The energy mechanisms that would be needed to cause such incredible over thrusts are nowhere observed in our modern world. The Only recorded historical event that would have been capable of triggering such catastrophic disarrangement would have been the universal Noahic flood.

### *The Mobility Factor*

Although the geologic column contains many drastic exceptions to the evolutionary sequence of fossils there is, nevertheless, a broad general sequence in which many fossils are found. For example, the smaller, denser type of sea animals are *usually* in the lowest strata; amphibians and reptiles are *generally* in the middle layers and birds and mammals usually occupy the upper layers of sedimentary rock.

The creationist believes that the Noahic flood was responsible for forming the various layers of sedimentary rock, as well as creating a *general* order of animal burial and fossilization. Consider this: As the great "fountains of the deep" opened up, volcanic activity increased and sediment saturated waters began pouring into the oceans from rivers and other channels. The oceans began to swell, became increasingly turbulent, and finally overflowed their basins; carving out even more sediments. Many, but not all marine organisms soon became trapped by sudden sediment burial. The smallest, less mobile creatures were, in most cases, the first to be buried while the larger, more complex sea animals were able to escape burial for awhile longer until finally being overcome by the violence of the water action. Therefore, these larger, more complex marine organisms were buried in layers of sediment above the smaller, less mobile creatures. In addition to this, the agitation

of the water would also cause a sorting action to occur in which animals of similar sizes, shapes, and specific gravity would be sorted out at different levels in the sediments. In the field of hydrology, this phenomenon is known as hydrodynamic sorting. Because of this principle animals which had the most streamline or spherical shapes would have a tendency to settle out first because they would have less hydraulic drag.<sup>32</sup>

### *The Community Factor*

There are still other factors which could account for a general order of the species in the fossil record. One such factor is that animals have a tendency to live together in their own communities at different elevations and ecological zones. They often move in herds, especially when any type of danger approaches, therefore, many of these animal groups and communities would be overtaken by flood waters and consequently buried together. Therefore, we would not expect to find many instances where man was buried with saber-toothed tigers or dinosaurs because man would have lived in a totally different community.

The fossil record contains a wealth of evidence that indicates a vast number of species were, in fact, buried together in large groups of their own kind. A prime example of this is found in the previously mentioned dinosaur and mammoth graveyards. Usually if one dinosaur bone is discovered in a certain geographical location, it isn't long before hundreds and even thousands more are discovered in the same area.

### *The Anatomical Factor*

There is yet another important factor which can account for a general order of fossils. Consider this: As the oceans began to swell above their shore lines and water channels became increasingly large, all

types of animals would obviously attempt to escape impending disaster by seeking higher ground. Since sea animals would tend to be buried in the lowest layers of sediment, many of the amphibians would be the next in line for burial since they occupy those land areas that directly encompass the bodies of water. Because of this, certain reptiles would perish near the shorelines of flooded waterways and other reptiles would soon be destroyed because of limited mobility and height. As the waters continued to swell all animal species would continue to seek higher ground in order to escape disaster. However, the strongest and most mobile animals would be the last to be destroyed and would eventually become buried by the mud and sediments in the upper strata.

### *The Intellectual Factor*

Since man is the most intelligent of all earthly creatures, it is conceivable that in most cases he would have been able to escape disaster longer than others. He would have climbed mountains, built rafts, and utilized floating debris. Of course, he would eventually perish, but, in most cases, would not be subjected to sediment burial if he had been able to escape the initial stages of the flood. Therefore, the fossil record should have few human fossils and, if there were any, they should normally be found in the uppermost strata of the geologic column.

Is this the case? Indeed it is because in spite of the abundance of fossilized remains of an enormous variety of animal species, there are relatively few human fossils to be found in the world. There is also a lack of bird fossils, possibly because birds would have likewise been among the very last creatures to be destroyed by the flood.

### *Strata Formation*

It is difficult to account for the formations of the great layers of sedimentary rock on the basis of today's natural processes. However,

the formation of the great strata would be quite possible in the event of a universal flood, since sedimentary rock covers most of the surface of the earth and was formed by the deposition of various sediments that were once suspended in water and subsequently cemented together to form rock.<sup>33</sup>

Dr. John C. Whitcomb Jr., in his book, *“The World that Perished”* gives the following pertinent information which he obtained from Dr. Henry Morris who is an internationally recognized authority in the fields of hydrology and hydraulics. He says: “Dr. Morris has pointed out that according to the law of hydrodynamic selectivity a flood of the magnitude described in Genesis, with its unbelievably vast complex of sediment saturated currents, would of necessity produce horizontal, superimposed layers of materials that were selected and sorted by the moving waters according to their specific gravity and sphericity. As each current of water slowed down and deposited its load, another current would come from perhaps a different direction, carrying somewhat different types of materials, depositing them on top of the first layer without disturbing it. Thus, as various currents moved across the earth during the months of the flood, a great series of sedimentary strata would be formed in various parts of the earth; in some cases to depths of many thousands of feet.\*

The formation of strata and the general order of billions of fossils can be better explained by considering the effects of a global flood instead of a slow evolutionary process. The only way an evolutionist can account for discrepancies in the order and formation of fossils and strata is to incorporate many secondary assumptions and theories, which, in many cases, amount to nothing more than “poor excuses.” However, the creationist does not have to come up with “excuses” to explain fossil formation and order because a great water cataclysm would have had

---

\* John C. Whitcomb Jr., [The World That Perished](#) (Baker Book House, Grand Rapids Michigan, 1973) P. 72

certain predictable effects that would account for their formation and order. There would, of course, also be many exceptions to the general rules because of the flood's catastrophic nature. Therefore, we would expect to find cases where fossils are "out of order" and do not fit into the general framework.

### *Major Gaps*

The most devastating obstacle for the evolutionist is that there are great systematic gaps in the fossil record between the various classes, orders, and families of animals. If evolution is true, the fossil record should show evidence of transition from one "kind" of animal into another. For example, if invertebrates became vertebrates, there should be many fossils that show the intermediate changes from one group into the next. If fish gave rise to amphibians, there should be numerous fossils which show the slow development of the fin into feet and legs. If reptiles were ancestors of birds, there would be many fossils which demonstrate the gradual change of the fore limb into wings and from scales into feathers.

The evolutionist has a real problem here because there are absolutely no transitional forms to be found anywhere in the fossil record.<sup>34</sup> The fossil record contains the same distinct and separate groups of plants and animals that are found in today's kingdoms. Some of the fossil species are now extinct but they still had their own separate characteristics which allow them to be classified under a Linnaean-type classification system. If evolution were a fact, it would be practically impossible to have a distinct classification system because there would be an endless cycle of gradual development without these clear-cut categories.

The theory of evolution encounters this gap problem right from the beginning stages of life. Evolutionists claim that one-celled micro-

organisms have been found in pre-Cambrian rock. It is very questionable as to whether or not these microscopic specks in the pre-Cambrian rock were really one-celled animals or not. Even if they were, the fact remains that the next “stage” in the fossil record is an incredible abundance of complex, multi-cellular organisms such as trilobites, brachiopods, sponges, snails and jellyfish. These Cambrian organisms are found in unbelievably large quantities yet there is not one fossil anywhere which shows the developmental stages between “simple” one-celled animals and these highly complex multi-cellular organisms.<sup>35</sup> This gap problem continues with as great, and even greater, intervals between different “kinds,” all the way through the fossil record.<sup>36</sup>

### *“Reptile Birds”*

The evolutionary textbooks always indicate that there are a few species which “prove” that evolution occurred from one kind into another. One of the most famous and most frequently used examples is the case of the great “reptile bird” called archaeopteryx. Archaeopteryx had teeth and its wings had claws, therefore, evolutionists claimed that it was a link between birds and reptiles. However, the fact is, that archaeopteryx has since been classified as being 100% bird because it is now known that it was warm blooded and was covered with feathers.<sup>37</sup>

It is interesting to note that there is a modern bird living in South America, called the *hoactzin*, which has claws on its wings and is also considered to be 100% bird.<sup>38</sup> The presence of claws on the modern hoactzin’s wings certainly does not mean that this bird is in the process of evolution from another “kind.” It is true that there are no modern birds with teeth like archaeopteryx but this does not preclude the existence of a 100% bird with teeth that lived before the flood but is now extinct. In the other major animals groups there are species with teeth and without teeth. This is true among mammals, reptiles, amphibians

and fish. Therefore, it is reasonable to assume that the Creator who made these animal types with and without teeth, might have also made some birds with teeth that, for some reason, became extinct.

Archaeopteryx is far from being “proof” of evolution. The question must be raised again; where are the transitional forms that show the forelimb of the reptile changing into a wing? Where are the wings with half scales and half feathers? Just imagine the “pre-bird” dragging its wings (or wing) around before developing the mechanisms for flight. What would be the chances of survival for such a creature? The fossil record should be full of these transitional type creatures because they certainly wouldn’t have been able to escape from even the smallest of local disasters.

### *Bats*

The bat is a mammal that is capable of flight. Now, just because a bat has wings like a bird does not mean that it is a product of evolution in which one kind of creature has slowly acquired the characteristics of another kind. We know this because bats first appear in the fossil record as fully developed bats. Once again, there are no incipient or transitional stages of development to be found.<sup>39</sup>

### *The Miniature Horse*

The evolutionary textbooks will site another example that most evolutionists consider to be the very best “proof” of evolution in the fossil record. This “proof” is discovered by examining the fossils of horses - particularly a very small horse called “eohippus.” “Eohippus” was about the size of a fox and had four toes on its front feet and two toes on its hind feet. However, the fossil record contains a few other variations in the feet of this small animal. Some of these creatures had

three toes on each foot while others had feet that were similar to those of our modern horses.

Some experts believe that eohippus may not have been a horse at all but was a possible relative of the modern hyrax because of some similar characteristics between the two.<sup>40</sup> In any event, whether eohippus was truly an ancient horse or not is irrelevant because this type of variation within a species can hardly be considered “proof” of evolution. Remember, the creationist believes that God provided certain mechanisms that allow for change and variation to occur within a particular kind of species enabling the creature to better adapt to its environment. However, these changes have strict genetic limits that can never allow the development of one “kind” into a different kind.

Great variations exist among modern horses, nevertheless, each of these is still considered to be a bona fide member of the horse “kind.” There are, for example, midget horses living today that are not much larger than eohippus, yet, they are still considered to be 100% horse. The fossil record also contains various types and sizes of horses. Some of the fossilized horses seem to be identical in size and appearance to our modern horses. Others have slight variations in the feet and still others were even *larger* than our modern horse.

Eohippus appears in the fossil record as a fully developed creature with no evidence of any incipient or transitional changes from a previous ancestor. Any changes which do appear in the fossil record only demonstrate slight variation and by no means indicate that eohippus ever evolved from, or into, another kind of creature. If eohippus was truly a member of the horse family, the sudden loss of one or two toes and the subsequent development of a single toe or hoof would seem to indicate that the changes were actually mutations which did not result in a superior development of the foot but rather an inferior deterioration of



the foot. This type of downhill change could have resulted from the radical changes in the post-flood environment.

### *The Latest Absurdity*

The systematic gaps in the fossil record are so large, so obvious and so frequent, that many evolutionists have changed their Darwinian views about a slow progressive evolution of one kind into another kind. Many are now stating that the gaps represent sudden drastic changes that occurred because of cosmic radiation and other conditions. In essence, what these evolutionists are now trying to say is that we still can't observe evolution in today's world because it is a slow process that takes millions of years, and yet at the same time state that there are great gaps in the fossil record because evolution occurred too fast in the past. By applying this type of evolutionary reasoning, we must assume that at some time in the past, a reptile must have laid an egg and a bird hatched out of it.

### *Better or Worse?*

People are often under the impression that the creatures of the fossil world were quite different from our modern animals. This is simply not true because most of our modern life forms are found within the fossil record. One of the differences that *does* exist between many of our modern animals and those of the fossil world is that our modern animals, especially mammals, are often degenerate rather than superior to fossilized species. The ancient animals such as elephants, tigers, wolves, lions, rhinos, and a host of others were much larger and stronger than those of the present world.<sup>41</sup> So why have these species degenerated if evolution moves toward superiority?

It is true that certain species of the fossilized animals are now extinct; but this was probably due to the many and sudden adversities of

the post-flood era. The disappearance of certain species does not infer that evolution must have occurred. Since recorded history man has witnessed the extinction of many animals and it is a phenomenon that is still occurring in our modern world.

### *Living Fossils*

If evolution is an ongoing universal process, why are there so many species living today that have apparently gone for millions of years without changing from their original forms as they appear in the fossil record? A real irony is that certain animals of the fossil world that were once declared to have been extinct for hundreds of millions of years, were surprisingly discovered as still being still alive and well in our modern world. This has been somewhat of an embarrassment for evolutionists, especially since some of these “living fossils” were previously used as index fossils for dating rocks.

Among these “once extinct but now living” fossils is the crossopterygian fish which was supposed to have been extinct for *seventy million years*. This is very interesting because the crossopterygian fish has been considered to be one of the closest *links* in the fossil record between fish and amphibians. This brilliant deduction was arrived at because of certain “limb-like” features noted in its fins. Surprisingly enough these “limb-like” fins still provide excellent locomotion and maneuvering for the crossopterygian and what really is remarkable is that today’s crossopterygian fish is exactly like its earliest ancestor of the fossil record in every detail.<sup>42</sup> (Oh well, maybe in another 70 million years we will be able to detect some sort of narrowing of that great gap that still exists between a fish’s fin and an amphibian’s limb.)

Another similar embarrassment for the evolutionist is the fact that; the very same one-celled organisms that were involved in the initial stages of evolution have also been discovered alive and well.<sup>43</sup> Once

again, if evolution is an ongoing universal process, why are there so many species living today that have apparently gone for millions of years without changing from their original forms as they appear in the fossil record? This fact is sometimes written off as an “evolutionary mystery.” However, it would seem that the total number of diverse obstacles in the fossil record would constitute too many “mysteries” for the theory of evolution to be so widely accepted as “fact.”

### *Dinosaur Tracks*

Some of the most intriguing animals that ever roamed the face of the earth were the dinosaurs. According to the theory of evolution, the dinosaurs became extinct about 70 million years ago (which is about 68 to 69 million years before man supposedly “evolved”). Because of this, dinosaur bones are often used as index fossils for dating purposes. The creationist, on the contrary, believes that man and dinosaur *both* inhabited the earth from the time of creation until shortly after the universal flood. The evolutionist vigorously opposes this assertion that man and dinosaur lived contemporaneously because such an assumption is extremely detrimental to the theory of evolution.

With these two opposing viewpoints in mind, consider the following: At the Paluxy River near Glenrose, Texas, some very important discoveries have been made that have since been ignored by most of the scientific community. Many dinosaur tracks have been discovered in this river bed over the past century. However, on one occasion, after a local flood in 1911, one of the nearby residents discovered some extremely large *human* footprints in the freshly exposed limestone of the river bed. These prints were reported to be 16 inches long and 9 inches wide; at a stride of 6 feet, that later changed to 9 feet - almost as though this giant person had started running from

something<sup>44</sup> (possibly an ensuing flood?). In any event, the man who made this discovery was not a scientist and because the river has since eroded the limestone in the area of this reported finding, its validity can no longer be proven. However, it is interesting to note that *other human tracks* have since been discovered along this river bed. Most of them have been normal footprints, but one print was taken that was actually 16 inches long and 9 inches across like those that were seen in 1911.<sup>45</sup>

Some of the local residents of this area soon realized that dinosaur tracks were a popular and marketable item, so they began cutting them out of the river bed and selling them for profit. However, since there was a limited supply of tracks, some people decided to cut out sections of river bed and carve out their own “dinosaur” footprints by hand. Unfortunately, because this practice did indeed occur, evolutionists have claimed that any previous human footprints that were taken from the river must have also been carved out by hand because dinosaurs became extinct almost 70 million years before man evolved.

In an attempt to resolve the issue of whether or not human tracks were found with dinosaur tracks, a research team conducted an extensive investigation into the matter. The team traced a set of human footprints across the river bed to the edge of the river bank. They wanted to see if the tracks continued in the limestone under the river bank, so they removed the undisturbed soil of the bank that was resting on top of the limestone.

The team discovered several perfect human footprints under the bank, one of which crossed the path of a three-toed dinosaur. This discovery diminished the possibility of “hand carved” footprints because they were found eight feet below the surface of the river bank.<sup>46</sup>

There have been many other human and dinosaur tracks discovered by competent research teams near the Paluxy River. In several cases the

human and dinosaur tracks have crossed paths and there are two instances in which the two types of prints actually overlap each other.<sup>47</sup>

The evolutionary scientists have chosen to either ignore the evidence of these discoveries or explain them away with absurdities. Dr. Henry Morris sites one example in his book, *Scientific Creationism*, in which a Ph.D. geologist looked at the actual tracks and then stated that the prints must have been made by an ‘unknown two-legged creature with feet just like a human!’<sup>48</sup>

***UPDATE: After 1986, several of these discoveries along the Paluxy River have been called into question. Some (maybe not all) of the “human footprints” were apparently made by a portion of a dinosaur footprint. This does not negate other evidence around the world in which “human-like” and dinosaur footprints (as well as horse hoof prints) have been found together.<sup>49</sup> There have also been reports from educated people (some scientists) who testify that they saw dinosaurs in remote swamp areas of the Congo.<sup>50</sup>***

### *Cultural Dinosaur Tracks*

Apart from the geological evidence that man and dinosaur lived contemporaneously, there are some other factors that indicate this same possibility. Paintings have been discovered in caves and on canyon walls that portray dinosaurs. Certain caves in Rhodesia; that were inhabited by Bushmen until 1500 B.C., have wall paintings that depict the great brontosaurus dinosaur.<sup>51</sup> The Bushmen are known to have only painted from reality. Therefore, they would have actually had to observe a brontosaurus before painting it.

Other indications are found in ancient writings. For example, in the book of Job (which is one of the oldest books in the Bible) the fortieth chapter describes an incredible beast called “behemoth.” The exact identity of this creature has been somewhat of a mystery to many

theologians who have attempted to associate the Biblical description of this beast with creatures of our modern world. In doing so, many of these sincere men have deduced that behemoth must have been an elephant. However, an honest evaluation of these verses in the book of Job will negate any application to an animal of our modern world. Consider this description: “Behold now behemoth, which I made as well as you; he eats grass like an ox. Behold now *his strength is in his loins, and his power in the muscles of his belly*. He bends his *tail like a cedar*. The sinews of his thighs are knit together. His bones are tubes of bronze; his limbs are like bars of iron. He is the first of the ways of God.” (Job 40:15-19).

Could God really be describing an elephant in these verses? Can the puny little tail of an elephant be represented as being anything like a great cedar tree? A more appropriate candidate for this description would be one of the great dinosaurs, such as brontosaurus or tyrannosaurus who had tails like cedars and powerful muscles of the stomach and thighs.

A further indication that man and dinosaur lived contemporaneously is found in the fact that some of the ancient cultures of the world had myths and legends about great creatures that are known to us as “dragons.” These legends were usually laced with obvious fantasy but they may have been initially based upon observation of dinosaurs by early ancestors who verbally transmitted the descriptions of these magnificent beasts to their offspring. If this were not the case, it would be difficult to account for the descriptive similarities between diverse cultures since “dragons” are portrayed universally as having physical features which are similar to those of certain dinosaurs.

### *The Only Conclusion*

The creationist is convinced that man lived contemporaneously with dinosaurs and all of the animals of the fossil world, regardless of their supposed evolutionary age. This assumption is further supported by various fossil formations. For example, the trilobite is considered to be one of the oldest forms of marine life; yet, one man accidentally discovered the footprint of a *human wearing a sandal* in the ancient trilobite beds of Antelope Springs, Utah.<sup>52</sup> In this particular case, trilobites were found *within the footprint itself*. And, since this discovery scientists have found other human footprints in ancient trilobite beds. This is quite remarkable when one considers that trilobites were supposed to have existed from 300 to 600 million years ago.

Unfortunately, whenever geological evidence is discovered that drastically contradicts the framework of evolution, it is difficult to arouse any sincere interest or unbiased observation within the general scientific community. The “scientific” attitude is like that of a person who says, “I know I’m right so don’t confuse me with the facts.”

### ***The Truth:***

*“Then God said, “Let the waters teem with swarms of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth in the open expanse of the heavens. God created the great sea monsters and every living creature that moves, with which the waters swarmed **after their kind**, and every winged bird **after its kind**; and God saw that it was good.... Then God said, “Let the earth bring forth living creatures **after their kind**: cattle and creeping things and beasts of the earth **after their kind**”; and it was so.... God made the beasts of the earth **after their kind**, and the cattle **after their kind**, and everything that creeps on the ground **after its kind**; and God saw that it was good.” (Genesis 1: 21, 24, 25)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## IV

## MISSING LINKS?

***The Lie: Humans and apes evolved from a common ancestor.***

According to the theory of evolution, the first true man evolved from a common ancestor of the ape anywhere from one to three million years ago. This common ancestor has never been found but evolutionists claim to have found several transitional forms of man's development from this common ancestor to his current physical status.

Almost every grammar school child has seen pictures that depict the gradual evolution of man from a pre-historic ape-like brute to his present physical status. Therefore, it is assumed by most students that science has obtained enough evidence to justify this common portrayal of man's development. Few students realize that such a portrayal is based almost entirely upon theory and not upon fact. The minor variations found in ancient human skeletal fragments and parts can hardly justify the evolutionary picture of man's development.

The reconstruction of man or beast from fragmentary skeletal structures is highly speculative and is often influenced by pre-conceived evolutionary ideas. It is difficult to ascertain exact thicknesses of the tissues that cover the bone, or to determine amounts and locations of body hair. This fact becomes obvious through observing the vast differences found in the pictorial renderings of ancient "ancestors" that have been derived from the exact same bone fragments. It is true that some of the fossils that were once *thought* to be "ancestral man" had some very obvious physical differences and characteristics not found in



modern man, however, these were later determined to be the remains of *apes* and not men at all. History has demonstrated a repetition of gross error in the reconstruction of ancestral man from ancient skeletal parts. This error has mainly stemmed from the biased anticipation of evolutionists who were overly anxious to prove their beloved theory at any cost.

For example, in 1926, a skull cap was discovered in Java that was determined to be a skull belonging to one of the famous “missing links” known as “*Pithecanthropus Erectus*.” After the publicity and impact of this discovery died down, the skull was later determined to be the knee cap of an elephant!<sup>1</sup>

The history of evolution is laden with such blunders. In one case, a bone was discovered in Seattle that was heralded to be an ancient human fibula, but, later was identified as being part of a bear’s hind leg.<sup>3</sup> In another incident, a tooth was discovered in Nebraska that was proclaimed to be the tooth of another “missing link” known as “*Hesperopithecus*.” Authorities were so positive about their find that they introduced the tooth as court room evidence in the famous “Scopes Evolution Trial” in Tennessee. However, two years after the trial, the tooth of this famous “Nebraska Man” was determined to be the tooth of an extinct pig!<sup>2</sup>

***UPDATE: Some sources that are cited in the reference section of this book indicated that the tooth mentioned above was introduced as courtroom evidence in the Scopes trial. This statement is incorrect. However, the tooth was an important factor affecting the trial. Here are some more details about the trial and the infamous tooth:***

***The famous Scopes Evolution Trial in 1925 provides a striking example of just how ludicrous some of the “missing link” discoveries of the past have been. The Scopes trial was purposely staged to bring national attention to the controversial theory of evolution. John***

*Scopes was accused of violating the Butler Act which forbade teachers from teaching human evolution in publicly funded classrooms. The prosecution was lead by three-time presidential candidate, William Jennings Bryan while the famous defense lawyer, Clarence Darrow, represented John Scopes. During a two year period preceding the trial, there was a scientific and public debate taking place over the discovery of a single tooth in Nebraska that was determined to be the tooth of a prehistoric human ancestor known as “Hesperopithicus” or “Nebraska Man.” This discovery was useful in promoting public acceptance of the theory of evolution and included conceptual drawings of an ape-like human and his entire family. This single tooth discovery was one of several factors that were instrumental in bringing about the Scopes trial and William Jennings Bryan expected the discoverer of the tooth to be called as a witness for the defense since so many people considered it to be evidence of man’s evolution. The discovery of the infamous “Nebraska Man” tooth influenced the events of the trial but it was never actually entered as official evidence in the trial. About two years after the trial, Nebraska man’s tooth was determined to be the tooth of an extinct pig! History is laden with such erroneous “proofs” of evolution which, in some cases, have been nothing but frauds and hoaxes.*

Two separate discoveries in Colorado also caused a great amount of embarrassment within the evolutionist community. One of these discoveries involved the reconstruction of a man from another single tooth that turned out to be a horse tooth.<sup>4</sup> The other blunder was made when a small “ape-man” skull was discovered and put on display in a museum. This “museum piece” turned out to be the skull of a pet monkey that had been buried just ‘a few years previously.’<sup>5</sup>

In 1912, a jawbone and part of a skull were discovered in Piltdown, England. However the famous “Piltdown Man” (also known

as “Dawn Man”) lost his credibility when it was learned forty years later that he was the product of a brilliant hoax. The skeletal fragments had been deliberately tampered with in order to give the appearance of great age. Apparently, human teeth of the relatively young jawbone had been replaced by ape’s teeth.<sup>6</sup> Isn’t it incredible to think that such a deception went undetected by leading evolutionary authorities for almost forty years?

In spite of the many mistakes of the past, most people are under the impression that today’s evolutionary discoveries are much more credible because of modern scientific and technological advancements. However, the unfortunate reality is that most modern discoveries and evaluations are still influenced by biased judgments. The evolutionist is convinced that man evolved, therefore, any variations in skeletal structures from present day “species” are often hastily considered to represent stages of man’s evolution. The evidence from which evolutionists make these hasty determinations is usually fragmentary and incomplete.

Some of the most important discoveries consist of nothing more than partial skull caps or jaw fragments. Because of this, the premature identification of “ancestral human fossils” has often resulted in a later re-classification due to discoveries of additional fossil evidence of the same type. For example, several different “species” that were once considered to be primitive forms of man have been re-classified as “homo sapien” (modern man’) due to the increase of fossil evidence from around the world.<sup>7</sup> Conversely, some of the very earliest forms of “ancestral Man” are now considered by many evolutionists to be nothing more than ancient apes.<sup>8</sup>

Since so many errors have been made in classifying ancient skeletal parts, one of the most crucial concerns of anthropological research should be the careful and unbiased identification or

determination of these ancient skeletal remains; however, prejudicial judgments still abound.

*Ne'r The Twain Shall Meet*

The creationist realizes that limited physical variations exist within “mankind” and within “ape-kind” but he is convinced that there never was a time when the two different groups ever intersected. The creationist believes that man and ape have always been two distinct kinds and have experienced limited genetic variations that have never crossed the divine boundaries that separate one kind from another.

In our modern world there are various differences among species of the ape categories, just as there are certain physiological differences between the various races of men. However, any physiological differences that exist among the races of modern man do not mean that any particular group is “more human” than another. These physical differences that exist between men of different races and geographical locations merely demonstrate the concept of limited variation within a particular “kind.”

Even though there are certain physical similarities between the skeletal structures of modern man and modern ape, it is nevertheless, quite evident that man and ape are still two very distinct and separate “kinds.” Few people realize that the whole concept of ancient men having ape-like characteristics is based almost entirely upon erroneous and/or premature evaluations of fragmentary evidence. Too many times this has proven to be the case throughout the history of the theory of evolution. Whenever sufficient fossil evidence does exist, the creationist believes that all “missing links” can be classified as either 100 percent man or 100 percent ape. This is not a presumptuous belief because there have been recent developments in the evolutionist community that lend credence to this idea.

### *Rama Who?*

One such development involves a shift in the attitude of certain evolutionists concerning the significance of a “15 million year old” ape-like creature known as Ramapithecus. This important creature is believed to have been a pre-human form of man’s development from the mysterious common ancestor. This claim has been boldly made in spite of the fact that the only fossil evidence for Ramapithecus consists of a partial jaw and a few teeth.<sup>9</sup>

Several comparisons have been made between the dental measurements of Ramapithecus and other species of approximately the same age that are considered to be true apes. The comparisons revealed that the variation between the dental measurements of Ramapithecus and the fossil apes was less than the variations that exist between the dental measurements that were taken from within a group of living chimpanzees.<sup>10</sup> Some of the “human” characteristics of the Jaw and teeth of Ramapithecus are also found in the teeth of a living, high altitude baboon known as Theropithecus Galada.<sup>11</sup> However, the Galada baboon is certainly not on the evolutionary road to manhood.

Since the fossil record contains many extinct forms of a variety of modern animals, it is safe to assume that Ramapithecus is nothing more than an extinct ape. Indeed, this is precisely what some of the foremost evolutionists in the world have also concluded.<sup>12</sup>

### *The First Flower Children*

The significance of other famous “missing links” has somewhat eroded in the past decade. Consider the case of the famous “Neanderthal Man” who was always portrayed as a brutish individual with a slumped posture and an extremely primitive lifestyle. Due to the fact that more

skeletal remains of “Homo Neanderthal sis” have been recently discovered, anthropologists have had to re-classify him and place him in the category of “Homo sapien” (modern man).<sup>13</sup> Because of obtaining more skeletal evidence, it has been learned that “Neanderthal man” had a brain capacity that was equal to and sometimes greater than that of modern man.<sup>14</sup> Any physical differences found were no greater than the physical differences that exist among the various races of modern man. Furthermore, most anthropologists believe that his stooped posture was probably caused by arthritis or rickets because his diet was definitely lacking in vitamin D.<sup>15</sup> If Neanderthal man than had stood erect, he would not have been distinguishable from modern man.

It has also been learned that the Neanderthal culture was not so primitive. It is now known that Neanderthal man painted pictures, made fine tools and implements, practiced religion and even raised flowers.<sup>16</sup> His culture was no more primitive than certain “uncivilized” cultures that exist today in our modern world. Most people agree that cultural differences do not make one person any more or any less human than another person because the young children of a present day “cave man” could be placed in a more technologically advanced society and would have the same capacity for learning as any other child in the advanced society.

The well-known “Cro-Magnon man,” “Heidelberg man” and several others are also proving to be much more modern in appearance than originally portrayed.<sup>17</sup> It is now known that the Cro-Magnon man was superior to modern man in physical size and brain capacity. Also, the “pre-human” jawbone characteristics of “Heidelberg man” have been duplicated in certain modern races.<sup>18</sup> Many of these “missing links” have been pictured for years as ape-like brutes when in fact, their characteristics were no different than those that are found among modern people of different races.

*“Southern” Exposure*

Some of the more substantial “proofs” of evolution have been obtained through the past efforts of Louis Leakey and the more recent efforts of his son Richard Leakey. Many fossils have been recovered by these men, mostly in East Africa, that have been assigned to a group known as the “Australopithecines.” Australopithecines means “Southern Ape” and the first fossil of this type was discovered in 1924 by Raymond Dart who believed that his new discovery was truly a “missing link” of the ancestral chain that lead to the development of modern man. Since the time of the discovery, Louis and Richard Leakey have discovered additional fossils of this type that have lead many evolutionists to conclude that Australopithecus lived from about two to three million years ago, that he walked erect and probably had crude tools. However, his brain was definitely much smaller than that of modern man because his cranial capacity was only 500 cc (which is the same as that of certain apes).

There have been two fairly recent developments which have served to contradict the popular picture of Australopithecus. In the past, there had been a scarcity of limb bone fossils of Australopithecus. Richard Leakey, however, accumulated additional limb bone fossils which lead him to the conclusion that Australopithecus had short legs, long arms and probably walked on his knuckles.\* One might conclude, therefore, by inductive reasoning that if Australopithecus walked like an ape, had arms and legs like an ape, and the brain of an ape, there is a good possibility that he was nothing more than an ape. Some of the “human-like” characteristics of the teeth and jaw of Australopithecus are also similar to those of the high altitude Galada baboon.<sup>19</sup> Chances are that

---

\* See page 173 of Scientific Creationism by Dr. Henry Morris or page 357 of Science News volume 100 (November 37, 1971).

this important “missing link” will one day have to be re-classified as a true ape.

There is one more development which has been devastating to the common evolutionary image of Australopithecus and others. At Lake Rudolf in north Kenya, Richard Leakey discovered a completely human skull which dates back almost three million years (by evolutionary methods of course).<sup>20</sup> Some limb bone fossils were also discovered which indicate that this human walked fully erect.<sup>21</sup> This discovery has been detrimental to the whole ancestral chain of evolution because it provides evidence that a 100 percent human being was living as long ago as Australopithecus which means that Australopithecus could hardly be an ancestor of modern man if modern man was already around when he was. The whole evolutionary chain of development, which leads to Australopithecus and then on to later “species,” must therefore, be erroneous.

There have been other “modern” skulls discovered which have also pre-dated the early “ancestors” of evolution. Some of these were found in undisturbed Pliocene strata and were well-documented at the time of their discovery.<sup>22</sup> Unfortunately, since such discoveries do not fit into the evolutionary framework, they have often been ignored or explained away and then forgotten.

### *"Higher Learning"*

The evolutionists encounter their greatest difficulties when they try to explain the origins of human language, races, and religions in terms of evolution. The greatest observable difference between man and animal is human speech. There are over 3,000 different languages in the world; all of which are extremely complicated. The most “primitive” languages today and throughout history are usually more complicated than those of



the “civilized” world.<sup>23</sup> Man has the unique ability to communicate abstract thoughts with articulate, symbolic sounds. The infinite chasm between the chattering of animals and the articulate speech of humans is admitted, by some evolutionary authorities to be an unsolvable mystery.<sup>24</sup> The noises of animals only reflect their emotions or physical conditions; Whereas human beings are able to communicate abstract thoughts and human reasoning. Some animals have been taught to mimic some of the symbolic sounds of man but it is interesting to note that there is not a single *mammal* which is capable of imitating human speech.<sup>25</sup> It would seem that if man is a “higher mammal,” there should be other mammals capable of at least making human noises, even though they obviously, like all animals, could never be taught to communicate or think on man’s infinitely superior level.

Many animals are taught some very remarkable and seemingly intelligent traits, but they can only acquire this knowledge through man’s efforts and training. They are totally incapable of passing on this information to their progeny. The ability of man to pass on newly acquired information from one generation to the next is another attribute which distinctly separates him from animals. The technological advancement of mankind in no way reflects that he is continually evolving toward higher levels of life. Instead technology argues against evolution because it demonstrates man’s unique ability to keep accumulating new information from one generation to the next. Unlike man, animals are totally incapable of transmitting new information from one generation to the next. It is true that many animals have some very meticulous and complicated social activities, but these are a part of their inherent instincts and remain unchanged from generation to generation.

The various races among human beings present another problem for the evolutionist. The races of men are considered by evolutionists to be the “sub species” of the species “Homo sapien.” The early patriarchs of evolution did not have as difficult a task in attempting to explain races as modern evolutionists do. They were convinced that the various races of men were all at different levels of superiority or inferiority in their evolutionary struggle for “survival of the fittest.” This view is evident in their early writings. Consider these words of Charles Darwin from one of his published letters: “The more civilized so-called Caucasian races have beaten the Turkish hollow in the struggle for existence. Looking to the world at no very distant date, what an endless number of the lower races will have been eliminated by the higher civilized races throughout the world.”\* Consider also these words of the famous evolutionist, Thomas Huxley. “No rational man, cognizant of the facts, believes that the average Negro is the equal, still less the superior, of the white man.”\*\*

The founding fathers of evolution were, for the most part, racists. Modern evolutionists, as a *whole*, do not believe that any race of man is superior to another. They believe that the races of mankind diverged from an early human population which came from one common ancestor rather than from a variety of different pre-human ancestors. However, this modern evolutionary view presents a problem because; if all men have a common ancestry, why are there so many physical differences among races?

Some evolutionists agree that in order to achieve the genetic variations that are characteristic in races, the early human ancestral population would have somehow had to have been divided into very

---

\* Charles Darwin as quoted by Dr. Henry Morris, Scientific Creationism (Creation—Life Publishers, San Diego, California, 1974) p. 179

\*\* Thomas Huxley as quoted by Dr. Henry Morris, Scientific Creationism (Cr,reation—Life Publishers, San Diego, California, 1974) P. 179 & 180

small groups and segregated from the main population. This would allow some of the recessive genetic traits to become evident because the groups would be forced to reproduce by inbreeding for a while and the distinctive national traits would emerge quite rapidly.<sup>26</sup> Now the question is; if mankind originated together, how could the main population be forced or persuaded to divide into small and separate groups? It would seem advantageous for survival to remain a part of the main progressive body or at least remain in contact with the main population which would minimize inbreeding.

By evolutionary standards, the only way to achieve this segregation and inbreeding of small groups would involve a long time period with a separate history of “evolution” for different races at separate stages or points in time. This type of reasoning, however, can also lead to racism because if each race has its own unique and separate history of evolution which produced physical differences, why wouldn't differences in intellectual capacities have also been produced by evolutionary processes?

The creationist believes that the Bible provides the answer to the perplexing question of how races were formed. The most effective and fastest way to divide a single group of people would be to destroy their ability to communicate with each other. If the common language could be confounded, then people would unite with those to whom they were able to communicate. This would force small populations to migrate away from each other and slowly re-establish their own civilization with whatever natural resources and individual talents were available to them. Each new group would have to go through a “stone-age” type of transition period because it would take some time to re-establish some of the previous conveniences that were enjoyed by the main population before the dispersion occurred.

The Bible records an event in the eleventh chapter of Genesis in which the common language of mankind was supernaturally confounded by God. The Bible states that the whole earth was of the same language and had congregated in an area of the mid-east called the land of Shinar which was later called Babylon. It seems that human knowledge had increased greatly and the people of the earth had decided to construct a city and a special tower “whose top will reach into heaven” (Gen. 11:14). This tower was probably a structure known as a “ziggurat” which was a specially designed building that was used in ancient astrology. It is known that astrology originated in the area of ancient Babylon and many of these ziggurats have been excavated through archaeology. Apparently, the people of the earth had united in an effort which was contrary to God’s divine purpose and the best interests of mankind. They were quite possibly attempting to become the masters and planners of their own destinies instead of relying upon fellowship and guidance from the Eternal Creator. In any event, the Bible states that the common language was divided into many diverse languages and the people were scattered “over the face of the whole earth.”

The evidence of archaeology attests to the fact that the birth of civilization seems to have occurred in this general area of the middle-east.<sup>27</sup> After the dispersion, each small group would have tried to re-establish some form of civilization but they would first have to endure a period of primitive living until some of their previous conveniences and accomplishments could be re-established. This phenomenon is also supported by facts of archaeology which show the rapid and almost simultaneous development of cultures around and away from the center of where the dispersion was supposed to have occurred.<sup>28</sup> Those settlements which were the greatest distance away from the center of dispersion took slightly longer to develop than those which were closest. The smallest groups of people would have probably been forced to

migrate the greatest distances because they would have been pushed out by the larger more powerful groups. The smallest groups would have also encountered the most difficulty in trying to reestablish some form of civilization because their combined talents and knowledge would have been greatly limited.

If the average person in our modern technological world were suddenly, and completely, cut off from civilization and forced to start a new life in some wilderness, the person would have to survive in a very primitive manner because our advanced lifestyle is dependent upon many individual contributions and the cumulative knowledge of society as a whole. The fact that such a person would be forced to live a primitive life does not mean that his capacity for learning is any less than that of a person in a more advanced society.

Regardless of the physical and social differences that exist among the races of men, the Bible makes it perfectly clear that all people of all nations are of one basic and unique “kind” in the eyes of God. The twenty-sixth verse of the seventeenth chapter of Acts states: “God hath made *of one blood all nations of men* for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed and the bounds of their habitation.” Racism is certainly not a Biblical concept. The roots of racism, however, are deeply implanted in the theory of evolution.

### *That Old Time Religion*

The religious nature of human beings presents another great difficulty for evolution. Archaeology has revealed that even the most ancient cultures practiced some form of religion. Throughout history, people have prayed, worshiped deity, and have had an anticipation of an afterlife which is reflected in the ceremonial activities that accompany the death of a loved one. There is an obvious intrinsic spiritual nature which separates man from animal. Certain people attempt to suppress or

conceal this inherent nature by adopting philosophies which reject the concept of a God, but a close scrutinization of these philosophies will usually reveal that they in themselves form a *religion* because they incorporate a system of standards, ethics, ideals, moral values, and ultimate interpretations of life. A cognizant human being cannot hide from the fact that he or she has a consciousness which animals do not possess.

The Bible has some important words for those who deny the existence of God. Consider these words in the first chapter of the book of Romans: "...that which is known about God is evident within them; for God made it evident to them. For since the creation of the world his invisible attributes, his eternal power and divine nature have been clearly seen, *being understood through what has been made*, so that they are without excuse. For even though they knew God, they did not honor him as God, or give thanks; but they became futile in their speculations, and their foolish heart was darkened. *Professing to be wise, they became fools.*" (Rom. 1:19 - 22).

The most vital and most controversial of all questions pertaining to the origin of life is the question of whether man is a product of evolution or special creation. Is man merely a higher animal or is he separate and unique from all other forms of life on earth? It is obvious that a person's self-image has a direct influence upon his actual character. The person who considers himself or herself to be a special created being with a definite purpose in life and a responsibility toward an omnipotent, personal God will more than likely have a different expression of behavior than the person who thinks of himself as being a higher animal, a chance product of evolution who is involved in the short struggle for existence.

### *Population*

The world today contains approximately 4½ billion people. The average worldwide population growth rate is at approximately 2 percent per year which means that there is an average of 3.6 children for every family on earth.<sup>29</sup> The world population 2,000 years ago was only about 130 million which means that today's population is thirty times greater than it was just 2,000 years ago. Because of population statistics, the evolutionist is faced with another major problem in his theory. The creationist encounters no such difficulty with population figures because they coincide with the theory of special creation much better than with the theory of evolution.

According to the theory of special creation, the universal flood must have occurred anywhere from 4,000 to 8,000 years ago. It can be mathematically calculated that the current population of 4½ billion could be produced from just two people in a four thousand year period with an average annual growth rate of only ½ percent. In other words, instead of the current 3.6 average of children per family, it would only take 2.5 children per family to reach the current population figures in four thousand years.<sup>30</sup> (This is assuming that each generation only lived to be forty years old and died before any grandchildren were born.) Therefore, in just 100 generations, a growth rate of ½ percent per year or ¼ of the current annual growth rate is all that would be required to produce the present population in four thousand years. This conservative growth rate would easily compensate for any long adverse effects upon population which may have resulted from wars, famines, or diseases.<sup>31</sup>

The evolutionist believes that man has been around for at least one million years and some evolutionists are convinced that he has walked the earth for almost three million years. By using the same conservative growth rate of ½ percent per year, it can be calculated that in one million years or 25,000 generations, starting from just two people, the

population would be greater than  $10^{2100}$  which of course is an impossibility.<sup>32</sup> Most people have no realization of just how large  $10^{2100}$  is. One billion would be represented by the number “one” which would be followed by nine zeros, or it could be written as  $10^9$ . The number  $10^{2100}$  would be represented by the number “one” followed by 2,100 zeros! How large is that? Well, just consider that in a single drop of water there are more than 100 billion billion atoms. A hydrogen atom is the smallest of all atoms yet it is still more than a thousand times greater than an electron. If the entire universe was filled to its capacity with electrons, it could only hold  $10^{130}$  of these tiny atomic components. This calculation is taken from the book, Scientific Creationism, by Dr. Henry Morris and it is based upon the assumption that the universe extends for a distance of five billion light years.<sup>33</sup> (A light year is the distance that light can travel in a one year period at a speed of 186,000 miles per second). It is obvious that if the universe could only hold  $10^{130}$  electrons, then the population of the world could never attain a number like  $10^{2100}$ . The reason for these ridiculous mathematical computations is to demonstrate that the earth should have reached its potential capacity for people many hundreds of thousands of years ago.

The evolutionist claims that growth rates were much less in man's early years because of adverse conditions but such an assumption is ludicrous. Since we know that the population of the earth 2,000 years ago was only 130 million, the 998,000 years prior to this time would have had an inconceivable mortality rate. Even if the growth rate during the past million years had miraculously been small enough to produce the current population of 4½ billion, it would still mean that a minimum of 3,000 billion people would have had to live and die during this long period.<sup>34</sup> If this were true, why would human fossils be so rare? Why wouldn't archaeology have any evidence of the many cultures which must have



existed in the past? Once again, the observable facts are in favor of the creationist theory. The evolutionist has to provide more “poor excuses” to account for the facts.

### ***The Truth:***

*“Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; and let them rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over the cattle and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth. God created man in His own image, in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them. God blessed them; and God said to them, "Be fruitful and multiply, and fill the earth, and subdue it; and rule over the fish of the sea and over the birds of the sky and over every living thing that moves on the earth." (Genesis 1: 26-28)*

*“When I consider Your heavens, the work of Your fingers, The moon and the stars, which You have ordained; What is man that You take thought of him, And the son of man that You care for him? Yet You have made him a little lower than God, And You crown him with glory and majesty! You make him to rule over the works of Your hands; You have put all things under his feet, All sheep and oxen, And also the beasts of the field, The birds of the heavens and the fish of the sea, Whatever passes through the paths of the seas. O LORD, our Lord, How majestic is Your name in all the earth! (Psalm 8: 3-9)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## V

## LIFE BY CHANCE?

*The Lie: If given enough time, life can be formed through random processes*

The formation of the first “simple” cell by random processes must have indeed been a miraculous event. Evolution speaks of simple life forms but in reality, there is no such thing as a simple life form or even a simple single cell. Not too long ago, science considered the structure of a single living cell to be rather simple but this concept has radically changed. Science has discovered that the very “simplest” living cell is a vastly complex organism in itself. The cell contains hundreds of proteins, enzymes, and hormones, each of which has a special function and complex system all of its own. The cell membrane is capable of selecting and transporting essential products such as oxygen, vitamins, salt, sugar, etc... There are tiny power plants called mitochondria which convert food into energy which is then utilized to maintain the many other components of the cell. The cell manufactures its own proteins from complex factories called ribosomes. These ribosomes act upon information and exact specifications which are supplied by a messenger known as RNA. The RNA receives its information from a substance called DNA which is in the nucleus of the cell. The DNA acts like a complex computer with all the necessary capability and information to reproduce any and all parts of the remainder of the cell. DNA has hundreds of thousands of information bits which it must remember and be able to utilize in order to maintain the proper cell function.

If a single cell was ever formed by chance, it would obviously have to have been capable of reproducing itself or life would have ended with the first cell. In order to reproduce itself, it would be necessary for DNA to be present in the nucleus of the cell. A single strand of DNA is composed of a chain which consists of hundreds of individual links which must be in the proper sequence. The smallest single link of this DNA chain is composed of about 200 molecules which also must be in an exact order.<sup>1</sup>

The science of probability can be used to effectively demonstrate the impossibility for life to have occurred by chance from random particles. To illustrate the law of probability, consider what the chances would be for three separate blocks, A, B, and C to fall in their proper sequence if they were placed in a hat, shaken, and then tossed on the floor. Since there are three separate blocks, the probability is determined by multiplying  $1 \times 2 \times 3$  which equals 6. This means that there is one chance in six that the blocks will land in the proper sequence. The reason for this is because there are six different combinations which can be made from the letters A, B, and C. The combinations are ABC, ACB, BAC, BCA, CAB, and CBA. If a fourth block with the letter D is added to the hat, the chances of landing in sequential order become  $1 \times 2 \times 3 \times 4$  or one chance in 24 because there are 24 different combinations that can be obtained from the four letters. If a fifth block is added the odds become  $1 \times 2 \times 3 \times 4 \times 5$  or one chance in 120 attempts. The odds climb to one chance in 720 attempts if a sixth block is added. By determining probabilities, gambling casinos around the world are able to insure that their businesses will ultimately produce great profits because of predictable odds.

Now consider what the chances would be for the smallest link in the long DNA chain to arrive at its proper functioning sequence by chance. The chances that 200 different parts could come together in their

proper order is one chance in  $10^{375}$  which is written as a “one” with 375 zeros after it!<sup>2</sup> Since it would only be possible to cram  $10^{130}$  electrons into the entire universe, we will assume for the sake of simplicity that there could be no more than  $10^{130}$  “particles” available from which the proper sequence of 200 parts could be formed. (This estimate is exceedingly generous). This means that the universe could hold no more than approximately  $10^{128}$  separate groups of 200 components. In order to insure that one combination or group of 200 will be in the correct sequence, however, it will require  $10^{375}$  separate groups of 200 components to be formed. Since only  $10^{128}$  of these groups could ever be formed at any one time in the universe, it is highly improbable that any of the  $10^{128}$  groups would contain the proper sequence because it requires  $10^{375}$  groups to insure that one will have the proper order. If the first groups didn’t contain the proper sequence of 200, suppose that all of their  $10^{130}$  particles managed to separate from their original groups, and re-arrange themselves into new groups of 200 components each; If this didn’t work, suppose they were mixed and re-shuffled to form new groups, and then more groups, and so on until the proper sequence was attained. Even if these particles were separated and re-arranged into new groups a billion times per second, it would still be inconceivable to achieve the proper sequence. If the universe is 30 billion years old, then  $10^{18}$  seconds would have ticked by since the beginning of time.<sup>3</sup> If the  $10^{130}$  particles were mixed and re-arranged a billion times per second, then in 30 billion years they would have made  $10^{27}$  attempts at attaining the proper sequence. In 30 Billion years, therefore, the most groups of 200 that could possibly be formed in the universe would be  $10^{27} \times 10^{128}$  which would equal a maximum possible total of  $10^{155}$ . Since it would require  $10^{375}$  groups to insure that the proper sequence would be attained by chance, the odds that the  $10^{155}$  possible attempts would contain this

proper functioning sequence is  $10^{155}$  divided by  $10^{375}$  which equals one chance in  $10^{220}$ . These odds amount to no real chance at all!

If there is really no practical chance that the smallest link of the human DNA chain of a single human cell could be formed by random processes in 30 billion years, how are we to account for the billions of complex life forms on earth which are each composed of billions and billions of diverse and complex living cells? To assume that life evolved by chance random processes requires more faith than it takes to believe that there is an eternal designer and creator who is responsible for the existence of a complex, organized universe. The *essence* of life is still a great mystery because even if all the necessary components for life *are* available in their proper sequence, after the obvious death of an organism, it is still not possible to restore the essence of life once it has vanished.

Many people are under the impression that modern scientists have managed to “create” life from non-living materials but this is a false assumption. There have been some remarkable achievements made by biochemists involved in genetic research but nothing has ever been created from basic chemicals which can qualify as being “life.” Scientists have managed to synthesize some basic amino acids under a controlled laboratory environment but the conditions that were necessary to accomplish this feat could not have existed outside of a laboratory. The amino acids had to be immediately taken out of the environment in which they were formed; otherwise they would have been destroyed by that very same environment.<sup>4</sup> The synthesis of amino acids is certainly a noteworthy accomplishment but an amino acid is far from being classified as “living” in any sense of the word.

In 1970 a man by the name of J. P. Danielli was reported to have synthesized the first living cell. This living cell, however, was constructed from the dismantled components of other living cells which

means that life still had to be originated from that which was already living.<sup>5</sup> Most of the spectacular and well publicized achievements in genetic research are attained by the utilization of organisms which are already living. There are complex problems in the quest for “creating life” which appear to be insurmountable. Let us suppose though that someday science actually does manage to unlock the mystery of life itself. Such an accomplishment would certainly not be the result of some random natural process. It could only be attained through years of planning, organization, and intense study and observation of present living systems. In other words, such an achievement could only be realized by creative processes under controlled and exacting laboratory conditions. In the final analysis, since man is a living entity, life would have still had to have come from life. It would have required a living creator because it is obvious that the first synthesized cell would have never been able to create itself.

It is difficult to adequately present and document in a few short chapters, the wealth of scientific evidence which supports the theory of special creation. The purpose of this section has been to stimulate an interest that will lead to further investigation by the reader. The bibliography at the end of this book contains some excellent study material which has been written by dedicated men of science. One book, in particular, offers a unique authoritative comparison between evolution and creation. This book is called Scientific Creationism and it was written by Dr. Henry Morris who is the director of the Institute for Creation Research. This book contains numerous quotations from some of the nation’s top authorities and zealous advocates of evolution who independently acknowledge the numerous inadequacies and major problems which the theory of evolution encounters. Unfortunately, students in our public educational systems will seldom be presented with these types of admissions by these top authorities because the theory of

evolution has become the “sacred cow” of science and is now presented as undeniable fact in every form of media available.

There is no logical reason why an alternate theory which is supported by thousands of bona fide scientists could not be taught in conjunction with the theory of evolution. This can be done in a way that adheres to scientific facts and avoids any mention of religion or the Bible. Students should be given the opportunity to make their own decisions, based upon the facts that are presented for each theory. It is unfortunate that so many young people are denied this important opportunity.

### ***The Truth:***

*“O LORD, how many are Your works! In wisdom You have made them all; The earth is full of Your possessions.” (Psalm 104:24)*

*"You alone are the LORD. You have made the heavens, The heaven of heavens with all their host, The earth and all that is on it, The seas and all that is in them. You give life to all of them And the heavenly host bows down before You.” (Nehemiah 9:6)*

*“For You formed my inward parts; You wove me in my mother's womb. I will give thanks to You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made; Wonderful are Your works, And my soul knows it very well. My frame was not hidden from You, When I was made in secret, And skillfully wrought in the depths of the earth; Your eyes have seen my unformed substance; And in Your book were all written The days that were ordained for me, When as yet there was not one of them. How precious also are Your thoughts to me, O God! How vast is the sum of them!”  
(Psalm 139: 13-17)*

*"You alone are the LORD. You have made the heavens, The heaven of heavens with all their host, The earth and all that is on it, The seas and*

*all that is in them. You give life to all of them And the heavenly host bows down before You.” (Revelation 4:11)*

[“Scripture quotations taken from the NASB.”](#)

## EPILOGUE

### **Deception Mastered**

Satan is a master liar, and because of this, it would require more than a lifetime to uncover all of the many lies and deceptive schemes that he foists upon humanity. The few deceptions that have been revealed in this book are merely examples of the many mental and spiritual obstacles that Satan strives to erect in order to prevent people from obtaining the free gift of eternal life which God has made available to all. Hopefully, the reader of this book has received enough truth to destroy the plans of Satan, and to enjoy the plans of God.

*“You will know the truth, and the truth will make you free.”*

*(John 8:32)*

**Thank you for your interest in discovering the truth. If you are reading a “hard copy,” please go to: [www.Lies-Deception.com](http://www.Lies-Deception.com) To find the most current active links to other helpful tools, information and to the recommended study resources listed below. (Click on the bottom of the intro / landing page and you’ll be taken to the book’s main page. Then click on the “Further Study Resources” button located on the navigation pane.)**



## RECOMMENDED STUDY RESOURCES

*The following books, videos and free websites represent only a few of the many comprehensive resources that are available for further study and research. Robert G Linkey is a participant in the Amazon Services LLC Associates Program, an affiliate advertising program designed to provide a means for sites to earn advertising fees by advertising and linking to amazon.com. Clicking any of the amazon.com links in this section will take you to their own website. Robert Linkey will only be informed of sales statistics and will not receive any personal information from amazon.com (Please refer to amazon.com's own privacy polices if you go to their site by clicking on any of the links below.)*

### BOOKS

#### In Defense of the Faith

##### *The New Evidence That Demands A Verdict*

**This is one of the most comprehensive reference works in defending the Faith that has ever been written. Josh McDowell, the author, has been a modern day champion of the Christian Faith and he has written more than 45 books. This book contains more than 700 pages and it has been written in outline form for the serious student. It is packed with extensive citations and references to other authoritative sources to verify every piece of evidence that is presented in supporting the validity and the integrity of the Bible and the Christian Faith.**

**[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)**

##### *The Case for Christ*

**This fact filled book “reads like a captivating fast-paced novel, but its not fiction!” The perfect “quick-read” for skeptics!” The author, Lee Stroebel is a Yale Law graduate and a seasoned journalist who was the former legal editor for the Chicago Tribune. In this book, he interviews a dozen scholars from leading universities like Princeton and Cambridge and “cross examines” them with tough questions concerning Jesus and Christianity. Learn about his intriguing journey from atheism to Christianity in this popular best-seller.**

**[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)**

##### *In the Beginning: Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood*

**Dr. Walt Brown holds a Ph.D. from M.I.T where he was a National Science Foundation Fellow. He is a retired full colonel (Air Force), West Pointe Graduate and former Army Ranger and Paratrooper. During his 21 years in the military, he was Director of Bennet**

Research, Development and Engineering Laboratories in Albany, New York. He was also a tenured associate professor at the U.S. Air Force Academy and Chief of Science and Technology Studies at the Air War College. In this “must read” book, Dr. Brown, a former evolutionist, meticulously exposes the scientific fallacies that the theory of evolution espouses and brilliantly conveys the wealth of scientific evidence in support of creation and the flood. He does so in a logical and highly organized manner that is easy to understand. Dr. Brown’s “Hydroplate” theory is revolutionary and provides the best explanation available for a worldwide flood and the geologic events and anomalies that such mechanisms would produce. This book is well documented and beautifully illustrated.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

## Spiritual Growth

### *The Jesus I Never Knew*

Discover the *real* Jesus in this remarkable book. The author, Phillip Yancy, will take you beyond the stereotypes and religious facades that are often associated with Jesus. Even the most dedicated, loving and “seasoned” Christians will discover insights into the life and teachings of Jesus that are new, fresh and challenging. It’s time for the Church to show the world a true picture of who Jesus was.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

### *Passion for Jesus: Growing in Extravagant Love for God*

The Bible tells us that we only love God because He first loved us. The full revelation of God’s love for us will create a “passion for Jesus” that will culminate in an “*extravagant love for God*” and will totally transform the lives of those who understand God’s love and experience it. The Author, Mike Bickle is a pastor, teacher and prayer warrior whom God has used mightily to open up the well springs of His love in the lives of many around the world.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

### *The God Chasers*

What is a God Chaser? According to Tommy Tenney, the author of this book; “A God chaser is an individual whose hunger exceeds his reach. A God chaser is a person whose passion for God’s presence presses him to chase the impossible in hopes that the uncatchable might catch him. A child chases a loving parent until, suddenly, the strong arms of the father enfold the chaser. The pursuer becomes the captive; the pursued the captor. Paul put it this way: „ I chase after that I may catch that which apprehended me” (Phil 3:12)”

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

### *This Day We Fight!*

Like it or not, dedicated Christians will face spiritual warfare against a ruthless enemy who wants to render them powerless. This being the case, it is imperative that Christians learn how to fight in the strength and victory of the Lord Himself. Author Francis Frangipane's message "equips believers to receive a fresh anointing from the Holy Spirit – an anointing that will activate the „war mode“ in their hearts. We stand at the cusp of a major spiritual awakening in our land, and this is no time for surrender. No, this day we fight!"

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

## **Exposing False Doctrine**

### *Kingdom of the Cults (rev. and updated ed.)*

This classic masterpiece, written by the late Dr. Walter Martin, has been updated and revised by cult and occult expert Ravi Zacharias. It has been an invaluable resource for Biblical scholars and lay people alike in identifying and understanding the history, false doctrines and teachings of the cults. This tool will equip the believer with factual and thought provoking answers for those who need to hear the truth and to be set free from systems that outwardly seem moral but inwardly distort the true nature of Jesus and His free gift of Salvation. It's time to be ready for the next misguided soul who God brings to your very doorstep to hear the Truth.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

## **America's Christian Heritage**

### *Original Intent: The Courts, the Constitution & Religion*

Author David Barton is a brilliant historian who has been greatly used by God to restore the truth concerning America's Christian heritage. He extensively refers to original founding documents and the actual words and actions of our founding fathers to demonstrate that American History, as taught in most of our universities and affecting our modern judicial system, is a blatant distortion of the actual facts of history. The "cherry picked" negative history (and sometimes blatant lies) that are being taught to our students concerning America and its founders are exposed and shown to be ludicrous in this *must read* book.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

[CLICK HERE TO WATCH A SIX MINUTE VIDEO OF BARTON AT THE CAPITAL](#)

### *Setting The Record Straight: American History in Black & White*

In this book, David Barton reintroduces many of our nations Black heroes and forefathers who have been “swept under the rug” of American history. Both Black and White students are shocked and amazed to discover this forgotten, rich history concerning the many important contributions that were made these forgotten American heroes.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

## **Exposing Abortion**

### *ProLife Answers to ProChoice Arguments*

Author Randy Alcorn exposes the hidden secrets behind the multi-billion dollar abortion industry and the complicity of politicians and the media to keep these secrets guarded. Nearly 50 million babies have been aborted in America since Roe v. Wade under the euphemism of “choice.” This eye-opening and well documented book is a “must read” for every Christian who is called to protect the defenseless. We must stop this killing machine from wrecking the lives of more thousands of deceived and uninformed women and to halt the further slaughter of the unborn innocents.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

### *Gianna: Aborted.... and Lived to Tell About It*

Gianna Jessen’s story is the account of a baby girl who was miraculously saved by God after she was aborted by her 17 year old mother. Her story is absolutely amazing and she shares the account of her remarkable journey from “abortion survivor to steadfast defender and lover of life” in this true story that exposes the horror of abortion and exemplifies the precious value of every life.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

[CLICK HERE TO WATCH A 16 MIN. VIDEO OF GIANNA SHARING HER STORY](#)

## **Jewish Outreach**

### *Answering Jewish Objections to Jesus*

This book (and its sequel volumes) represent one the most comprehensive and scholarly treatises ever written to address the common objections that Jewish people have concerning Jesus. Author Michael Brown holds a Ph.D. in Near Eastern Languages and Literatures from New York University and he is a contributor to the *Oxford Dictionary of*

*Jewish Religion.* He is a Jew whose life was radically transformed by Jesus (Yeshua) the Messiah of Israel. Dr. Brown has participated in many public debates with Jewish Rabbi's and he has written many books which have been translated into more than a dozen languages. He is an internationally recognized authority on revival and the Church's role and relationship to Israel, God's Chosen People.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

### *Jewish Roots: A Foundation For Biblical Theology*

Exploring the Jewish roots of the early Church will shed new light on many New Testament scriptures and will bring a special richness to one's theology that is invaluable. The author, Daniel Juster is another brilliant scholar who set out on a quest "for more knowledge of the Messiah of his own Jewish roots..." that led him "...through five Bible colleges, four degrees, and nearly three decades of intensive study." This book offers important insights into, not only the Jewish roots and practices of the early church, but it also educates the modern church in practical practices, roles and relationships between the Church and Israel.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

### *Our Hands are Stained with Blood*

This is another "must read" book by Dr. Michael Brown and its subtitle reads: "The Tragic Story of the „Church“ and the Jewish People." Many modern day Christians are unaware of the extent of evil and cruel treatment that Jewish people have endured throughout the centuries at the hands of the so called "Church." It is understood and revealed by the author that there has always been a "blessed stream" of true Christians who have loved and protected the Jewish people as well. However, even true Christians need to be aware of what our responsibility is in light of these atrocities, and to identify the many vestiges of anti-Semitism that, to this day, still infect those who truly love God.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

**VIDEO**

## **In Defense of the Faith**

### *Lee Stroebel Film Collection*

Lee Stroebel, former atheist and former legal editor for the Chicago Tribune has provided a DVD presentation that skillfully captures and encapsulates the main themes and topics of three of his best-selling books: *The Case for Christ*; *The Case for Faith*; and *The Case for*

*Creation.* In this Film collection, experts in various fields of education and science are interviewed and you will discover the wealth of compelling evidence that has been instrumental in convincing many skeptics of Christianity to commit their lives to the Lord Jesus.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

## America's Christian Heritage

### *The American Heritage Series*

This DVD series with David Barton needs to be watched by every person in America (and the world). History professors and students alike will be absolutely amazed (and sometimes angry) to discover the overwhelming amount of American history that has been intentionally twisted and hidden from its citizens over the past century by those who would prefer a Godless America. David Barton is a brilliant historian and constitutional expert who has a personal library that consists of “tens of thousands of original writings from our founding era.” He has been involved in several Supreme Court cases and often advises state and federal legislators in constitutional matters and history. A list of his numerous awards and achievements can be viewed on Amazon.com from the link below.

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

[CLICK HERE TO WATCH A SIX MINUTE VIDEO OF BARTON AT THE CAPITAL](#)

## Bible Lessons from the Promised Land

### *Faith Lessons (Seven volume DVD Set)*

These key lessons to Biblical understanding are taught on location in the “Promised Land” by Dr. Ray Vanderlaan. The insights into the cultures and context of important scriptures and stories will come alive in a new way and with a deeper understanding than words alone can describe. Dr. James Dobson said of these lessons: “Nothing has opened and illuminated the scriptures for me quite like the *Faith Lessons* series.” (These seven DVD volumes can also be bought individually.)

[CLICK THE AMAZON.COM LINK FOR MORE INFORMATION OR TO ORDER ⇒](#) [CLICK HERE](#)

## WEBSITES

## Creation Science and the Flood

***In the Beginning: Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood***

This is the free online version of the important “must read” book by Dr. Walt Brown (cited in the “BOOK” section above). Reading the actual hard cover book is a lot easier because you don’t have to wait for pages to load. If you decide to get a copy of the hard cover book, you might check back here and click the link for this book in the “BOOK” section above to compare prices before buying.

[GO TO WEBSITE](#)

**Archaeology**

***Associates for Biblical Research***

This website contains some great information that is relative to the Bible and recent archaeological discoveries. The field of archaeology is often scattered with many diverse opinions regarding certain discoveries until future discoveries bring clarity that most experts would have to agree with. At this point in time, because the Bible itself has been so instrumental in making past discoveries, there are many archaeologists who have a Godless agenda that seeks to find or speculate on any limited discovery in a way that seems to contradict the Bible. That is why it is important to hear the opinions and observations of those who are not set on discounting the Bible. This website is an excellent source for doing just that.

[GO TO WEBSITE](#)

**BOOKS FOR REBUTAL**

There will always be a constant barrage of assaults against Jesus and Christianity until the Lord Himself brings it to an end. In recent years there have been several scholarly books that have had a widespread impact in damaging the faith of many nominal Christians, and in bolstering the confidence of many atheists in their Godless world views. Below (on the left) are listed some of those books that have recently assaulted the Christian Faith. On the right are books written by Christian scholars that refute the contentions of those popular books in a completely thorough and convincing way. For more information about the books and their authors (or if you would like to order any of them) you can click on any of the Links to Amazon.com below.

*The God Delusion* (By Richard Dawkins) vs. *The Dawkins Delusion?* (Alister McGrath) [CLICK HERE](#)

*God Isn't Great* (By Christopher Hitchens) vs. *The Rage Against God* (Peter

Hitchens)[CLICK HERE](#)

*Misquoting Jesus* (By Bart Ehrman) vs. *Misquoting Truth* (Timothy Paul Jones)[CLICK HERE](#)

*The DaVinci Code* (By Dan Brown) vs. *Reinventing Jesus* (3 co-authors)  
[CLICK HERE](#)

## **THANK YOU**

Thank you for taking the time to read this book. I pray that God's rich blessings will be poured out upon you and your family in the years ahead.


### **One More Note (and Favor)**

As mentioned at the top of this section, I am an affiliate of Amazon.com. If you ever do any shopping online, please consider using this link ([Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com)) to check out the vast "product universe" that is now available at Amazon. They have one of the most trusted and highly efficient websites available for purchasing a wide variety of products at *extremely competitive prices*. You can find items for home improvement, gardening, automotive, tools, electronics, computers, toys, books, grocery, health & beauty, clothing, shoes, jewelry and more! (If you are already supporting another worthwhile organization by purchasing products from Amazon through their affiliate link, please continue to do so and ignore this request.) Please go to: [Amazon.com](https://www.amazon.com) and bookmark this page for your future needs from Amazon. Thanks and be blessed! Rob Linkey





## Reference - Part I

### CHAPTER ONE (Merely a Book?)

1. McDowell, Josh, -Evidence for Your Faith - practical apologetics taped lectures, in a series of 7 cassette tapes from Campus Crusade for Christ) tape #1
  
2. Greenslade, Stanley Lawrence (ed.). Cambridge History of the Bible, (Cambridge University Press, New York, 1963) PP. 478-480; cited by Josh McDowell, Evidence That Demands a Verdict, (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernadine, CA., 1972 P. 21
  
3. Greerislade, Stanley Lawrence (ed.), Cambridge History of the Bible, (Cambridge University press, New York, 1963) p. 479; quoted by Norman L. Geisler and William E. Nix, A General Introduction to the Bible, (Moody Press, Chicago Ill. 1968) P. 122
  
4. McDowell, Josh, -Evidence for Your Faith - practical apologetics taped lectures, in a series of 7 cassette-tapes from Campus Crusade for Christ) tape #2
  
5. Unger, Merrill F., Unger's Bible Dictionary, Rev. ed., (Moody Press, Chicago Ill. 1971) P. 1147; cited by Josh McDowell, Evidence that Demands a Verdict, (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs San Bernardino, CA. 1972) P. 21
  
6. Encyclopedia Britannica, Vol. 3 (Encyclopedia Britannica 1970); quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid, P. 21
  
7. McDowell, Josh, ibid, P. 18
  
8. Collet, Sidney, All About the Bible (Fleming H. Revell Co., Old Tappan N. J.) P. 63: quoted by Josh McDowell, Evidence That Demands a Verdict, (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernardino, CA., 1972) P. 22
  
9. Geisler, Norman L. and William E. Nix, A General introduction to the Bible, (Moody Press, Chicago Ill. 1968) PP. 123-124
  
10. Sayce, A. H., Monument Facts and Higher Critical Fancies, (The Religious Tract Society, London, 1904) PP. 28, 29; quoted by Josh McDowell, More Evidence That Demands a Verdict, Vol. II, (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernardino CA., 1975) P. 68
  
11. Gordon, Cyrus H., -Higher Critics and Forbidden Fruit,  (Christianity Today, Nov. 23, 1959 Vol 4) PP. 133, 134; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 69

12. Morris, Henry ii. Ph.D., That You Might Believe, (Good News Publishers, Westchester, Ill., copyright 1978 by Henry Norris) P. 104
13. Burrows, Millar, What Mean these Stones? (Meridian Books, New York, 1957) P. 71; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 83
14. Free, Joseph P., -Archaeology and the Historical Accuracy of Scripture, Bibliotheca Sacra. July, 1956 Vol. 113) PP. 217, 218; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 81
15. Barton C. A., -Archaeology and the Bible, (American Sunday School Union, Philadelphia, PA. 1937) P, 347; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid.
16. Keller, Werner, The Bible as History (Bantam Books, by arrangement with William Morrow & Co., New York, copyright 1956 by Keller) PP. 82, 83
17. Ibid., P. 84
18. Free, Joseph P., Archaeology and Bible History, (Scripture Press, Wheaton Ill. 1969) p. 237; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid P. 308
19. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., ibid., p. 107
20. Ibid.
21. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., The Bible and Modern Science, (Moody Press, Chicago Ill., 1968) P. 92
22. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., That You Might Believe, (Good News Publishers, Westchester, Ill., copyright 1978 by Henry Norris) PP. 107, 108
23. McDowell, Josh, -Evidence for Your Faith - practical apologetics (taped lectures in a series of 7 cassette tapes from Campus Crusade for Christ) tape #2
24. Finegan, Jack, Light from the Ancient Past, (Oxford Press, London; distributed by Princeton University in the U. S., 1946) p. 188; quoted by Josh McDowell, More Evidence That Demands a Verdict, (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernardino CA. 1975) PP. 317, 318
25. Albright, William F., The Biblical Period from Abraham to Ezra, (Harper, New York, 1960) P. 85; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 318

26. Morris, Henry M. Ph.D., ibid., P. 113
27. Free, Joseph P., ibid., P. 237; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 317
28. Morris, Henry M. Ph.D., The Bible, and Modern Science, (Moody Press, Chicago Ill. 1968) p. 98
29. Morris, Henry M. Ph.D., ibid., PP. 98-99
30. Morris, Henry M. Ph.D., ibid., P. 99
31. Ibid.
32. Ibid.
33. Ibid., P. 100
34. Free, Joseph P. -Archaeology and Liberalism,  (Bibliotheca Sacra, . Oct. 1956 Vol. 113) PP. 322, 323; cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., P.302
35. Free, Joseph P., Archaeology and Bible History, (Scripture Press, Wheaton, Ill. 1969) PP. 68, 69; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 303
36. Sanders, C., Introduction in Research in English Literary History, (Macmillan Co., New York, 1952) P. 143; cited by Josh McDowell, Evidence That Demands a Verdict, (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernadino, AT972) P. 43
37. Hall, F. W., -M S Authorities for the Text of the Chief Classical Writers,  Companion to Classical Text (Clarendon Press, 1913); cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 48
38. Bruce, F. F., 32leBoolcs and the Parchments, (Fleming H. Revell Co., Westwood, 1963 Rev. ed) P. 16; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 47
39. Hall, F. W., ibid.; cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., p. 48
40. Ibid.
41. Ibid.

42. Ibid.

43. Geisler, Norman L. and William E. Nix, A General Introduction to the Bible (Moody' Press, Chicago, Ill. 1968) P. 268

44. McDowell, Josh, ibid., P. 49

45. Bruce, F. F., ibid., P. 182; cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 49

46. Anderson, J., The Bible the Word of God, (N. P., Brighton, 1905) P. 183; cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 49

47. Robertson, A. T., Introduction to the Textual Criticism of the New Testament, (Broadman Press, Nashville, 1925) P. 29; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 46

48. Geisler, Norman L. and William E. Nix, ibid., P. 366

49. Ibid.

50. Ibid.

51. Ibid.

52. Leach, Charles, Our Bible; How We Got It, PP. 35-36; Quoted by Norman L. Geisler and William E. Nix, ibid., P. 357

53. Montgomery, John Warwick, History and Christianity, (Inter - Varsity Press, 1971) P. 29: quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., PP. 63, 64

54. McDowell, Josh, -Evidence for Your Faith - practical apologetics (taped lectures in a series of 7 cassette tapes from Campus Crusade for Christ) tape #2

55. Ibid.

56. Ibid.

57. Elder, John, Prophets, Idols and Diggers, (Bobbs - Merrill, Indianapolis, New York, 1960) P. 160; cited by Josh McDowell Evidence That Demands A Verdict (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernadiud CA., 1972) P. 73

58. Albright, William, Recent Discoveries in Bible Lands, (Funk and Wagnalls, New York, 1955) P. 118; cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., p. 74
59. Free, Joseph P., Archaeology and Bible History, (Scripture Press, Wheaton Ill. 1969) p. 321; cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., pp. 74, 75
60. Davidson, Samuel, Hebrew Text of the Old Testament, (2nd ed.,) P. 89; cited by James Hastings, A Dictionary of the Bible, IV, P. 949; cited by Norman L. Geisler and William E. Nix, ibid., P. 241
61. Kenyon, Frederic G., Our Bible and the Ancient Manuscripts, (Harper and Brothers, New York, 1941) P. 43; quoted by Josh McDowell, ibid., P.57
62. Bruce, F. F., The Books and the Parchments, Rev ed. (Fleming H Revell Co. 1963) P. 117; Kenyon, Frederic G., Ibid., P. 38; cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., P. 58
63. McDowell, Josh, ibid., P. 60, 61
64. Geisler, Norman L. and William E. Nix, ibid., P. 263

## CHAPTER TWO (Just a Man?)

1. McDowell, Josh, -Evidence for Your Faith - practical apologetics (taped lectures in a series of seven cassette tapes from Campus Crusade for Christ)
2. Ibid.
3. Lindsey, Hal, The Promise, (Harvest House Publishers, Irvine, CA., 1974)
4. McDowell, Josh, Evidence That Demands a Verdict, (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs San Bernardino, CA., 1972) PP. 206, 207
5. Lindsey, Hal, ibid.

### CHAPTER THREE (Dead and Gone?)

1. Greenleaf, Simon, Testimony of the Evangelists, Examined by the Rules of Evidence Administered in Courts of Justice, (Baker Book House, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1965; reprinted from 1847 edition)
  
2. Mattingly, John P., Crucifixion: Its Origin and Application to Christ (unpublished Th. H. Thesis; Dallas Theological Seminary, May 1961; cited by Josh McDowell, Evidence That Demands a Verdict (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernardino, CA. 1972) PP. 203, 204
  
3. McDowell, Josh, -Evidence for Your Faith - practical apologetics ♦ (A series of seven taped lectures from Campus Crusade for Christ) tape #6
  
4. Ibid.
  
5. Ibid. (See also; Green, Michael, Man Alive Inter-Varsity Press, Downers Grove, Ill., 1968) P. 33
  
6. Thorburn, Thomas James, The Resurrection Narratives And Modern Criticism, (Kegan, Paul, Trench, Trubner & Co., London, 1910) PP. 1, 2; quoted by Josh McDowell, Evidence That Demands a Verdict (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernardino, CA., 1972) P. 216
  
7. McDowell, Josh, -Evidence For Your Faith - Practical Apologetics ♦ (A Series of seven taped lectures from Campus Crusade for Christ) tape #6
  
8. Danby, Herbert (trans.), The Mishnah, (Geoffrey Cumberlege, Oxford University Press, London, 1933) Middoth; cited by Josh McDowell, Evidence That Demands a Verdict (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs, San Bernardino CA., 1972) PP. 223, 224
  
9. Lindsey, Hal, -The Resurrection - Hoax or Historic Fact ♦ (Recorded Lecture from Westgate Press, Valley Forge, PA., 1980)
  
10. Ibid.
  
11. Tucker, T. G., Life in the Roman World of Nero and St. Paul (The MacMillian Co., New York, 1910) PP. 342-344; cited by Josh McDowell ibid.
  
12. Lindsey, Hal, ibid.
  
13. McDowell, Josh, Evidence That Demands a Verdict (Campus Crusade for Christ, Arrowhead Springs CA., 1972) P. 217

14. Lindsey, Hal, ibid.

15. McDowell, Josh, ibid., P. 231

16. Currie, George, The Military Discipline of the Romans from the Founding of the City to the Close of the Republic (An abstract of a Thesis published under the auspices of the Graduate Council of Indiana University, 1928) PP. 33, 49, 50; cited by Josh McDowell, ibid., PP. 221, 222

17. Ibid.

#### CHAPTER FOUR (Never to Return?)

1. Lindsey, Hal, The 1980's Countdown to Armageddon (Westgate Press Inc., copyright 1980 by The Aorist Corp.) P. 30

2. Kirban, Salem, Guide to Survival (Salem Kirban Inc., Huntingdon Valley, PA., 1978) P. 57

3. Ibid.

4. Rowland, F. S., -Recent Studies Give Support To Ozone Depletion Theory (Food and Drug Packaging, July 15, 1976), Vol. 35, No. 2; -Chlorofluorocarbons Threaten Ozone Layer (Chemical and Engineering News, Sept 23, 1974) P.27; Philadelphia Enquirer, Dec.8, 1974 New Yorker, April 7, 1975; References cited by Clifford Wilson and John Weldon, 1980's - Decade of Shock, (Master Books, San Diego CA., 1978) P. 119

5. Drosnin, M., -What's Being Done About Those Killer Aerosol Cans - Nothing, (New Times, 1974) P. 28; Walter Sullivan, (New York Times, Sept 26, 1974) P. 27; -Stratospheric Pollution: Multiple Threats To Earth's Ozone, (Science, Oct. 25, 1974); References cited by Clifford Wilson and John Weldon, ibid.

6. Ibid.

7. Wilson, Clifford, Ph.D., and John Weldon, 1980's - Decade Of Shock, (Master Books, San Diego, CA., 1978) P. 119

8. Ibid., P. 98
9. Ibid. PP. 102, 103
10. -Pesticide Causes Cancer, Hearing Told, (Los Angeles Times, Oct 26 1977; quoted by Clifford Wilson and John Weldon, ibid., P. 97
11. -Pest Control: An Assessment of Present and Alternative Technologies (Printing and Publishing Office, NAS, 2101 Constitution Ave., N.W., Washington D.C. 20418); cited by Clifford Wilson and John Weldon, ibid., P. 97
12. Wald, George; as quoted by Hal Lindsey during a taped lecture for the -Firefighters for Christ organization in 1979 at Los Angeles Calif.
13. -Nuclear War by 1999? Five Experts Think it Likely, (Current, Jan. 1976) P. 369; cited by Clifford Wilson and John Weldon, ibid., P. 11
14. The Stockton Herald, Stockton, California, Mar. 13-18 1960 or Mar 3-8, 1963; cited by Clifford Wilson and John Weldon, ibid., P. 15

## Reference - Part II

### CHAPTER ONE (No Scientific Validity?)

1. Morris, Henry N., Ph.D., The Bible and Modern Science, (Moody Press, Chicago, 1968) P. 6
2. Ibid., P. 5
3. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., That You Night Believe, (Good News Publisher Westchester, Ill., copyright by H Morris 1978) P. 20
4. Ibid., P. 23
5. Ibid., P. 22, 23
6. McGowen, C. H. M.D., In Six Days, (Bible Voice, Inc., Van Nuys, CA., 1976) P. 101
7. Ibid.
8. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., P. 39



9. Segraves, Kelly L., The Great Dinosaur Mistake (Beta: Books, San Diego CA., copyright 1975 by K. Segraves) P. 10
10. Mayr, Ernst; cited by Kelly Segraves, Ibid., Ibid., P. 15
11. Ibid. P. 14
12. Segraves, Kelly, Ibid., P. 15
13. Ibid., P. 15
14. Ibid., P. 16
15. McGowen, C. H., M.D., Ibid., P. 76
16. Barnett, Lincoln, ed., The World We Live In (Time Inc., New York, 1955) P. 81; cited by John C. Whitcomb, The World that Perished, (Baker Book House, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1973) P. 34
17. McGowen, C. H., M.D., Ibid., P. 32
18. Norris, Henry M., Ph.D., ibid Ps 86 (see also Henry Horns, Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, Creation - Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974, P. 123)
19. Morris, Henry H., Ph.D., That You Might Believe, (Good News Publishers, Westchester, Ill., copyright by H. Norris 1978) P. 85
20. McGowen, C.H., M.D., Ibid., P. 85
21. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation - Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) P. 128
22. Brown, Walter T., Ph.D., In The Beginning - Fourth Edition, (Center for Scientific Creation, Phoenix, AZ., 1986) P.15
23. Brown, Walter T., Ph.D. Ibid., P.15
24. McGowen, C.H., M.D., Ibid., P. 85
25. Stokes, Wm. L., -Another Look at the Ice Age, Science, Oct 28, 1955) P. 815; cited by John C. Whitcomb Jr., Ibid., P. 85
26. Hand, John Raymond, Why I Accept the Genesis Record (Back to the Bible Publication, Lincoln Nebraska, revised by Bolton Davidheiser, Ph.D., copyright by Good News Broadcasting Assoc. 1959) P. 58; See also Henry Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., PP. 223, 224)
27. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., and Martin E. Clark, The Bible Has The Answer, (Creation - Life Publishers, San Diego, CA. 1976) P. 94

## **CHAPTER TWO (Old and Getting Better?)**

1. Asimov Isaac, -In the Game of energy and Thermodynamics You Can't Even Break Even, Journal of the Smithsonian Institute, June 1970) P. 6; cited by Henry H. Morris, Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, San Diego CA., 1974) PP. 21, 23: (see also; Ibid, PP. 25, 38)
2. Ibid.

3. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., The Remarkable Birth of Planet Earth, (Creation - Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1972) P. 41
4. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation - Life Publishers, San Diego CA., 1974 PP. 131-148
5. Schindewolf, O.H., -Comments on Some Stratigraphic Terms, (American Journal of Science, Vol. 255, June 1957) P. 394; quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 135
6. Segraves, Kelly L., Ibid., PP. 18, 19
7. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., P. 132
8. Ibid., P.161
9. McGowen, C. H., M.D., Ibid., P. 52, 53
10. Lingenfelter, Richard E., -Production of C-14 by Cosmic Ray Neutrons, (Reviews of Geophysics, Vol. 1, February, 1963) P. 51; quoted by Henry M. Morris. Ph.D., Ibid., P. 164
11. Cook, Melvin A., -Do Radiological Clocks Need Repair, (Creation Research Society Quarterly, Vol. 5, Oct., 1968) P. 70; cited by Henry Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 165
12. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., P. 167
13. Kieth, M. S. and G. M. Anderson, -Radiocarbon Dating: Fictitious Results with Mollusk Shells, (Science, Aug. 16, 1963) P. 634; cited by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 162; (also Kelly Segraves, Ibid., P. 23)
14. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., PP. 140-149
15. Rancitelli, L. A., and D. E. Fisher, -Potassium-Argon Ages of Iron Meteorites, (Planetary Science Abstracts, (48th Annual Meeting of the American Geophysical Union, 1967) P. 167; cited by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 146
16. Cook, Melvin A., Prehistory and Earth Models, (Max Parrish and Co., London, 1960) PP. 66-68; cited by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P.146
17. Noble, C. S. and J. J. Naughton, -Deep-Ocean Basalts; Inert Gas Content and Uncertainties in Age Dating. (Science, Vol. 162, Oct. 11, 1968) P. 265; quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 147
18. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., P. 147
19. Whitcomb, John C. Jr., The World That Perished, (Baker Book House, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1973) P. 90
20. Jueneman, Frederick, -Scientific Speculation, (Industrial Research, Sept. 1972) P. 15: quoted by Henry M. Norris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 143 (See also; Henry M. Morris, Ibid., P. 142)
21. Trevor Norman and Barry Setterfield, The Atomic Constants, Light, and Time Box 318, Blackwood South Australia, 5051: self-published 1987) cited by Brown, Walter T., Ph.D., In the Beginning: Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood 7<sup>th</sup> Edition (Center for Scientific Creation, Phoenix, Az.,2001) P. 232
22. V.S. Troitskii, -Physical Constants and the Evolution of the Universe (Astrophysics and Space Science, Vol.139, No.2, Dec. 1987) pp 389-411; cited by Walter T. Brown Ph.D.,Ibid., P232

23. Eads, Buryl R., Let the Evidence Speak, (Peachtree Publishers. Ltd., copyright by Buryl Eads, 1979) P. 129
24. Barnes, Thomas G., -Origin and Destiny of the Earth's Magnetic Field (Institute for Creation Research, San Diego, CA. 1973) P. 64; cited by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 156
25. Nevins, Stuart E., -Evolution: the Ocean Says No!, (Acts and Facts, Impact Series No. 8, Oct, 1973); cited by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 155
26. Ibid.
27. McGowen, C. H., M.D., Ibid., P. 47
28. Pettersson, Hans, -Cosmic Spherules and Meteoritic Dust, (Scientific American. Vol. 202, Feb. 1960) P. 132; cited by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D. Ibid., P. 152
29. Morris, Henry M., Ibid., P. 152
30. Ibid.
31. Ibid.
32. Ibid., P. 153
33. Brown, Walter T., Ph.D., In the Beginning: Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood - 7<sup>th</sup> Edition (Center for Scientific Creation, Phoenix, AZ., 2001) pp 293-298
34. Ibid.

### CHAPTER THREE (Fossils Prove Evolution?)

1. Segraves, Kelly L., Ibid., P. 57
2. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., PP. 94, 95
3. Colbert, Edwin, The Age of Reptiles, Norton and Co., New York, 1965) P. 169; quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 98
4. Ibid., P. 99
5. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., P. 98
6. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., That You Might Believe, (Good News Publishers, Westchester, Ill. copyright by H. Morris, 1978) P. 85
7. Eads, Buryl R., ibid.
8. Patten, Donald W., -The Ice Epoch in Symposium on Creation, (Baker Book House, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1968) P. 129; quoted by Buryl Eads, Ibid., PP. 100, 101
9. Ibid
10. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., P. 101
11. Moore, Raymond C., Introduction to Historical Geology, 2nd ed., McGraw -

Hill New York, 1958) PP. 401, 402; quoted by John C. Whitcomb Jr., Ibid., P. 108

12. Whitcomb, John C. Jr., Ibid.

13. Segraves, Kelly L., Ibid., P. 71

14. Hollingsworth, S. E., -The Climatic Factor in the Geological Record, Q (Quarterly Journal, Geological Society of London, Vol. 118, March 1962) P. 13: quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation - Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) P. 109

15. McGowen, C. H., M.D., Ibid., p. 83

16. Morris, Henry H., Ph.D. Scientific Creationism, (Creation - Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) PP. 108, 109

17. Ibid.

18. Whitcomb, John C. Jr., and Henry M. Morris, The Genesis Flood, Presbyterian and Reformed Pub. Co., Nutley, N.J., 1961) P. 164

19. Ibid.

20. Whitcomb, John C. Jr., The World That Perished, (Baker Book House, Grand Rapids, Michigan, 1973) P. 124

21. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., PP. 108, 109

22. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., That You Might Believe, (Good News Publishers, Westchester, Ill., copyright by H. Morris, 1978) P. 75

23. Segraves, Kelly L., Ibid., P. 62

24. Ibid., P. 58

25. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., P. 76

26. Whitcomb, John, C., Jr., Ibid., P. 88

27. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., The Bible and Modern Science, (Moody Press, Chicago, Ill. 1968) P. 62

28. Whitcomb, John C., Jr., and Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., p. 191

29. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., P. 63

30. Ibid.



31. Segraves, Kelly L., Ibid., P. 62

32. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation-Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) P. 119

33. Ibid., P. 102

34. Ibid., P. 78-87

35. Axelrod, Daniel I., -Early Cambrian Marine Fauna, Q (Science, Vol. 128, 1958) P. 7; George, Neville, T., -Fossils in Evolutionary Perspective, Q (Science Progress, Vol. 48, Jan 1960) P. 5; Kay, Marshall and Edwin H. Colbert, Stratigraphy and Life History, (John Wiley and Sons, New York,

- 1965) P. 102; all of whom were quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., PP. 80, 81
36. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., PP. 78-86 (well-documented with numerous quotations from Evolutionary authorities)
37. Ibid., P. 85
38. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., P. 92
39. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., P. 84
40. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., That You Might Believe, (Good News Publishers, Westchester, Ill., copyright by H. Morris, 1978) p. 60
41. Ibid., p. 59
42. Gish, Duane T., -Gish Answers Faculty,  (Booklet published by Life Messengers, Seattle Washington) PP. 18, 19
43. Hutchinson, G. Evelyn, -Living Fossils,  (American Scientist, Vol. 58, Sept 1970) p. 534; quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation-Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) P. 89
44. Seagraves, Kelly L., Ibid., P. 34
45. Ibid., P. 35
46. Ibid., P. 36
47. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation-Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) P. 122
48. Ibid.
49. Brown, Walter T., Ph.D., In the Beginning: Compelling Evidence for Creation and the Flood - 7<sup>th</sup> Edition (Center for Scientific Creation, Phoenix, AZ., 2001) pp 249,250
50. Ibid.
51. Sevraves, Kelly L., Ibid., P. 38
52. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., P. 105

#### CHAPTER FOUR (Missing Links?)

1. Morris, Henry M. Ph.D., The Bible and Modern Science, (Moody Press, Chicago Ill., 1968) P. 50
2. Ibid.
3. Ibid.
4. Ibid.
5. Ibid.
6. Eads, Buryl., Ibid., PP. 149, 150

7. Ibid., P. 150
8. Eckhardt, Robert B., -Population Genetics and Human Origins, Scientific American, Vol. 226, Jan. 1972) P. 101; quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation-Life Publishers San Diego, CA., CA. 1974) P. 172
9. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., P. 144
10. Gish, Duane T., Evolution? The Fossils say No! Creation Life Publishers San Diego, CA., CA. 1973 P. 112
11. Gish, Duane T., Ibid., P.113
12. Eckhardt, Robert B., Ibid.; quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ph.D., Ibid., P. 172
13. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation-Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) P. 175
14. Dobzhansky, Theodosius, -Changing Man, Science, Vol. 155, Jan 27, 1967) P. 410; quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ibid.,
15. -Neanderthals Had Rickets, Science Digest, Vol. 69, Feb. 1971) P. 35; quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ibid., P. 175
16. Ibid., P. 175, 176
17. Morris, Henry M., The Bible and Modern Science, (Moody Press, Chicago, 111., 1968) P. 51; and, Morris, Henry M. That You Might Believe, (Good News Publishers, Westchester, Ill., copyright by H. Morris, 1978) P. 63; and, Eads, Buryl R. Ibid., P. 150
18. Ibid.
19. Morris, Henry M., Scientific Creationism, (Creation Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) P. 174
20. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., P. 151
21. Ibid.
22. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation-Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) P. 177
23. Linton, Ralph, The Tree of Culture (Alfred A. Kropf, New York, 1955) PP. 8, 9; quoted by Henry M. Morris; Ibid., P. 85
24. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., PP. 183-185
25. Linton, Ralph, Ibid., quoted by Henry M. Morris, Ibid., P. 184
26. Morris, Henry, Ibid., PP. 180-183
27. Ibid., PP. 188, 189
28. Ibid.
29. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., P. 152
30. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Ibid., P. 16

31. Ibid.
32. Ibid., P. 169
33. Ibid.
34. Ibid.

#### **CHAPTER FIVE (Life by Chance?)**

1. McGowen, C. H., M.D., Ibid., PP. 40, 41
2. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., The Remarkable Birth of Planet Earth. (Creation-Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1972) P. 4
3. Morris, Henry M., Ph.D., Scientific Creationism, (Creation-Life Publishers, San Diego, CA., 1974) p. 61
4. Eads, Buryl R., Ibid., P. 160-163
5. Morris, Henry M., Ibid., P. 50